Cambridge Journal of Mathematics
Volume 9, Number 1, 1–147, 2021

Fourier–Jacobi cycles and arithmetic relative trace formula (with an appendix by Chao Li and Yihang Zhu)

Yifeng Liu

In this article, we develop an arithmetic analogue of Fourier–Jacobi period integrals for a pair of unitary groups of equal rank. We construct the so-called Fourier–Jacobi cycles, which are algebraic cycles on the product of unitary Shimura varieties and abelian varieties. We propose the arithmetic Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture for these cycles, which is related to the central derivatives of certain Rankin–Selberg L-functions, and develop a relative trace formula approach toward this conjecture.

AMS 2000 subject classifications: Primary 11G18, 11G40, 14G40.

1. Introduction

1.1. Fourier–Jacobi cycles and the arithmetic Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$

We first recall the classical notion of Fourier–Jacobi periods for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$ and their relation with L-functions (see [GGP12a, Section 24] for more details). Let E/F be a quadratic extension of number fields with the nontrivial Galois involution c and the associated quadratic character $\mu_{E/F}\colon F^\times\backslash\mathbf{A}_F^\times \to \{\pm 1\}$. Let V be a (non-degenerate) hermitian space over E of rank $n \geqslant 1$ with respect to c, with the unitary group U(V). Consider two irreducible cuspidal automorphic representations π_1 and π_2 of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F)$. To define the Fourier–Jacobi periods for $\pi_1 \times \pi_2$, we need an auxiliary conjugate symplectic automorphic character μ of $\mathbf{A}_E^\times$, that is, an automorphic character of $\mathbf{A}_E^\times$ whose restriction to $\mathbf{A}_F^\times$ coincides with $\mu_{E/F}$. The character μ (together with a nontrivial additive character of $(E + \mathbf{A}_F)\backslash\mathbf{A}_E$) will give us a Weil representation of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F)$, with natural automorphic realization via theta series θ_μ^ϕ attached to certain Schwartz functions ϕ. We define the *Fourier–Jacobi period integral* for $f_1 \in \pi_1$, $f_2 \in \pi_2$, and ϕ to be

$$\mathcal{P}_\mu(f_1, f_2; \phi) \coloneqq \int_{\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F)\backslash\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F)} f_1(g) f_2(g) \theta_\mu^\phi(g)\, \mathrm{d}g,$$

where $\mathrm{d}g$ is the Tamagawa measure on $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F)$. The readers may realize that the above formula is very close to the Rankin–Selberg integral for $\mathrm{GL}(n) \times \mathrm{GL}(n)$ in which the role of the theta series is replaced by a mirabolic Eisenstein series (see [Liu14, Section 3] for a systematic discussion). In particular, it is not surprising that $\mathcal{P}_\mu(f_1, f_2; \phi)$ is related to L-values. In fact, if we assume that π_1 and π_2 are both tempered, then as a special case of the global Gan–Gross–Prasad (GGP) conjecture, one expects an Ichino–Ikeda type relation

$$|\mathcal{P}_\mu(f_1, f_2; \phi)|^2 \sim L(\tfrac{1}{2}, \pi_1 \times \pi_2 \otimes \mu) \cdot \alpha(f_1, f_2; \phi), \tag{1.1}$$

where $\sim$ means that the two sides are differed by an explicit nonzero factor which depends only on π_1, π_2, and μ; $L(s, \pi_1 \times \pi_2 \otimes \mu)$ denotes the complete Rankin–Selberg L-function (of symplectic type) centered at $s = \frac{1}{2}$; and $\alpha(f_1, f_2; \phi)$ is some explicit period integral of local matrix coefficients. See [Xue16, Conjecture 1.1.2] for a precise conjecture. Suppose that the central ϵ-factor $\epsilon(\frac{1}{2}, \pi_1 \times \pi_2 \otimes \mu)$ is 1. By the refined local GGP conjecture, which is known in this case by [GI16], if we consider the entire Vogan L-packet of the triple $(\mathrm{V}, \pi_1, \pi_2)$, then there is a unique member for which α is a nonzero functional. Thus, the global GGP conjecture asserts that the global period $\mathcal{P}_\mu$ vanishes on the entire Vogan L-packet if and only if $L(\frac{1}{2}, \pi_1 \times \pi_2 \otimes \mu) = 0$. Note that the L-function depends only on the Vogan L-packet.

Now suppose that $\epsilon(\frac{1}{2}, \pi_1 \times \pi_2 \otimes \mu) = -1$. Then the local GGP conjecture already forces $\mathcal{P}_\mu$ to be zero; and the first possible nonzero term in the Taylor expansion of $L(s, \pi_1 \times \pi_2 \otimes \mu)$ at $s = \frac{1}{2}$ is $L'(\frac{1}{2}, \pi_1 \times \pi_2 \otimes \mu)$. Thus, it is curious to find a replacement of $\mathcal{P}_\mu$ that encodes information about the first central derivative. This is the main goal of this article. In fact, the same question can be asked for all types of periods in the global GGP conjecture, namely,

(1) $\mathrm{O}(m) \times \mathrm{O}(n)$ with $n - m$ odd, which is of Bessel type,
(2) $\mathrm{U}(m) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$ with $n - m$ odd, which is of Bessel type,
(3) $\mathrm{U}(m) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$ with $n - m$ even, which is of Fourier–Jacobi type,
(4) $\mathrm{Sp}(2m) \times \mathrm{Mp}(2n)$, which is of Fourier–Jacobi type.

A replacement of the period integral (under certain assumptions on the field E/F and archimedean components of the representations) is only known before for Case (1) with $|m - n| = 1$ and $m, n \geqslant 2$, and Case (2) with $|m-n| = 1$ and $m, n \geqslant 1$. They are both realized as height pairings of certain diagonal cycles. See [GGP12a, Section 27] for more details. For example, the celebrated Gross–Zagier formula [GZ86] is responsible for $\mathrm{O}(2) \times \mathrm{O}(3)$; see [YZZ13] for a generalization. Now we give a formulation for Case (3) with $n = m \geqslant 2$.

In what follows, we will assume that E/F is a CM extension, and $n \geqslant 2$. We first state a result concerning the Albanese variety of a unitary Shimura variety. Let $\mathbf{V}$ be a totally positive definite incoherent hermitian space over $\mathbf{A}_E$ of rank n. We have the associated system of Shimura varieties $\{\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K\}_K$ indexed by sufficiently small open compact subgroups $K \subseteq \mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$, each being smooth of dimension $n-1$ over $\mathrm{Spec}\, E$. Let X_K be the canonical (smooth) toroidal compactification of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ (which is just $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ if it is already proper). Put $X_\infty := \varprojlim_K X_K$. Let A_K be the Albanese variety of X_K; see Section 2. Put $A_\infty \coloneqq \varprojlim_K A_K$, which is an abelian group pro-scheme over E. To every conjugate symplectic automorphic character μ of $\mathbf{A}_E^\times$ of weight one (Definition 4.3), we associate a number field $M_\mu \subseteq \mathbb{C}$, and an abelian variety A_μ over E with a CM action $i_\mu \colon M_\mu \to \mathrm{End}_E(A_\mu)_\mathbb{Q}$, unique up to isogeny, in Subsection 4.1. In particular, A_μ has dimension $[M_\mu : \mathbb{Q}]/2$; and the set $\Omega(\mu) \coloneqq \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_\infty, A_\mu)_\mathbb{Q}$ is naturally an $M_\mu[\mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-module depending only on μ.

Theorem 1.1 (Theorem 4.18, Corollary 4.20)**.** *Let the notation be as above. There is an isomorphism*

$$\Omega(\mu) \otimes_{M_\mu} \mathbb{C} \simeq \bigoplus_{\varepsilon} \bigoplus_{\chi} \omega(\mu, \varepsilon, \chi)$$

of $\mathbb{C}[\mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-modules. Here, $\{\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)\}_{\varepsilon,\chi}$, introduced in Definition 4.11, is a certain collection of Weil representations of $\mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ that are isomorphic to the finite part of the Weil representations appearing in the definition of $\mathcal{P}_\mu$. We refer to Theorem 4.18 for the precise statement. Moreover, for every sufficiently small open compact subgroup K of $\mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$, there is an isogeny decomposition

$$A_K \sim \prod_\mu A_\mu^{d(\mu,K)}, \qquad \textit{resp. } A_K^{\mathrm{end}} \sim \prod_\mu A_\mu^{d(\mu,K)}$$

over E when $n \geqslant 3$ (resp. $n = 2$), where

- *the product is taken over representatives of $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q})$-orbits of all conjugate symplectic automorphic characters of $\mathbf{A}_E^\times$ of weight one,*
- *$d(\mu,K) \coloneqq \sum_\varepsilon \sum_\chi \dim_\mathbb{C} \omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)^K$ with the same index set for ε, χ, and*
- *A_K^{end} is the endoscopic part of A_K when $n = 2$, defined in (D.3).*

The above theorem suggests that if we want to replace $\mathcal{P}_\mu$ by algebraic cycles, then the Albanese variety should be involved.

Definition 1.2. We say that a complex representation Π of $\mathrm{GL}_n(\mathbf{A}_E)$ is *relevant* if[1]

(1) $\Pi = \boxplus_{i=1}^{s(\Pi)} \Pi_i$ is an isobaric sum of $s(\Pi)$ irreducible cuspidal automorphic representations $\{\Pi_1, \dots, \Pi_{s(\Pi)}\}$, which we call *cuspidal factors* of Π, satisfying $\Pi_i \circ \mathtt{c} \simeq \Pi_i^\vee$ for every $1 \leqslant i \leqslant s(\Pi)$,

[1] Here, the notion of relevant representation is more general than the one in [LTXZZ] as we allow Π to be isobaric.

(2) for every archimedean place v of E, Π_v is isomorphic to the (irreducible) principal series representation induced by the characters $(\arg^{1-n}, \arg^{3-n}, \dots, \arg^{n-3}, \arg^{n-1})$, where $\arg\colon \mathbb{C}^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ is the *argument character* defined by the formula $\arg(z) := z/\sqrt{z\overline{z}}$.

Note that (2) implies that the cuspidal factors $\Pi_1, \dots, \Pi_{s(\Pi)}$ in (1) are mutually non-isomorphic.

Now we fix our (tempered) Vogan L-packet by choosing two relevant representations Π_1 and Π_2 of $\mathrm{GL}_n(\mathbf{A}_E)$. We also fix a conjugate symplectic automorphic character μ of $\mathbf{A}_E^\times$ of weight one. Let $\mathbf{V}$ be a totally positive definite incoherent hermitian space over $\mathbf{A}_E$ of rank n. Consider irreducible admissible representations π_1^∞ and π_2^∞ of $\mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ whose base change to $\mathrm{GL}_n(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty)$ are Π_1^∞ and Π_2^∞, respectively.

Take a sufficiently small open compact subgroup $K \subseteq \mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$. Let $\alpha_K\colon X_K \to A_K$ be "the Albanese morphism" sending the zero-dimensional cycle D_K^{n-1} to zero,[2] where D_K is the canonical extension of the Hodge divisor. For test functions $f_1, f_2 \in \mathscr{C}_c^\infty(K\backslash \mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)/K, \mathbb{C})$ for π_1^∞ and π_2^∞, respectively (Definition 4.26), and a homomorphism $\phi\colon A_K \to A_\mu$, we define a Chow cycle

$$\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K := |\pi_0((X_K)_{E^{\mathrm{ac}}})| \cdot (\mathtt{T}_K^{f_1} \otimes \mathtt{T}_K^{f_2} \otimes \mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}})^* (\mathrm{id}_{X_K \times X_K} \times (\phi \circ \alpha_K))_* \Delta^3 X_K$$

on $X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu$, where $\mathtt{T}_K^{f_i}$ denotes the normalized Hecke correspondence on X_K attached to f_i; $\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}}$ is a specific correspondence on A_μ (Definition 4.9); and $\Delta^3 X_K \subseteq X_K^3$ is the diagonal cycle. For $i \in \mathbb{Z}$, put

$$\mathrm{CH}^i(X_\infty \times X_\infty \times A_\mu)^0_{\mathbb{C}} := \varinjlim_K \mathrm{CH}^i(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)^0_{\mathbb{C}},$$

and denote by $\mathrm{CH}^i_\mu(X_\infty \times X_\infty)^0_{\mathbb{C}}$ the subspace of $\mathrm{CH}^i(X_\infty \times X_\infty \times A_\mu)^0_{\mathbb{C}}$ on which M_μ acts via the inclusion $M_\mu \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$, which depends only on μ.

Theorem 1.3 (Subsections 4.3 and 4.4)**.** *The Chow cycle* $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K$ *is homologically trivial, compatible under pullbacks when changing* K*, hence defines an element*

$$\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi) \in \mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_\infty \times X_\infty \times A_\mu)^0_{\mathbb{C}}.$$

[2]This is not exactly what we do. Here, we state it in this ideally correct but technically wrong way only for simplicity and for emphasizing the main idea. See Subsection 4.3 for the rigorous construction.

If we assume the conjecture on the injectivity of the ℓ-adic Abel–Jacobi map, then the assignment $(f_1, f_2, \phi) \mapsto \mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)$ induces a complex linear map

$$\begin{aligned}&\mathrm{FJ}_\varepsilon \colon \pi_1^\infty \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \pi_2^\infty \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \Omega(\mu,\varepsilon)\\ \to&\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{C}[\mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)\times\mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]}\left(\pi_1^\infty \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \pi_2^\infty, \mathrm{CH}_\mu^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_\infty \times X_\infty)^0_{\mathbb{C}}\right),\end{aligned}$$

which is invariant under the diagonal action of $\mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ on the left-hand side, for every given μ-admissible collection ε (Definition 4.12). Here, $\Omega(\mu,\varepsilon)$ is the sum of the factors of $\Omega(\mu) \otimes_{M_\mu} \mathbb{C}$ in the decomposition in Theorem 1.1 corresponding to ε, χ with χ arbitrary.

We propose the following unrefined version of the *arithmetic Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture* for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$.

Conjecture 1.4 (Conjecture 4.31)**.** *Let the notation be as above. Then for every given μ-admissible collection ε (Definition 4.12), the following three statements are equivalent:*

(a) We have $\mathrm{FJ}_\varepsilon \neq 0$.

(b) We have $\mathrm{FJ}_\varepsilon \neq 0$, and that

$$\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{C}[\mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)\times\mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]}\left(\pi_1^\infty \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \pi_2^\infty, \mathrm{CH}_\mu^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_\infty \times X_\infty)^0_{\mathbb{C}}\right)$$

has dimension 1.

(c) We have $L'(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi_1 \times \Pi_2 \otimes \mu) \neq 0$, and that

$$\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{C}[\mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]}(\pi_1^\infty \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \pi_2^\infty \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \Omega(\mu,\varepsilon), \mathbb{C})$$

is nonzero.

In view of the local GGP conjecture, the above conjecture implies that if $\epsilon(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi_1 \times \Pi_2 \otimes \mu) = -1$, then $L'(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi_1 \times \Pi_2 \otimes \mu) \neq 0$ if and only if one can find a triple $(\mathbf{V}, \pi_1^\infty, \pi_2^\infty)$ as above such that $\mathrm{FJ}_\varepsilon \neq 0$. Moreover, if this is the case, then such triple is uniquely determined for every fixed ε. See Remark 4.32 for more details. In fact, in the actual discussion in Subsection 4.4, we replace $\mathrm{CH}_\mu^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_\infty \times X_\infty)^0_{\mathbb{C}}$ by its quotient by the common kernel of ℓ-adic Abel–Jacobi maps for all ℓ, in order to avoid the conjecture on the injectivity of the ℓ-adic Abel–Jacobi map and make the discussion unconditional. Moreover, we also track the rationality of the functional FJ_ε via replacing $\mathbb{C}$ by a certain subfield of $\mathbb{C}$.

We now propose the following refined version of the *arithmetic Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture* for $\mathrm{U}(n)\times\mathrm{U}(n)$, which is an explicit formula relating the Beilinson–Bloch–Poincaré heights (See Subsection 3.2) of the cycles $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1,f_2;\phi)_K$ with the central derivative of $L(s,\Pi_1\times\Pi_2\otimes\mu)$.

Conjecture 1.5 (Conjecture 4.33)**.** *Let the notation be as above. For test functions f_1, $f_1^\vee$, f_2, $f_2^\vee$ for π_1^∞, $(\pi_1^\infty)^\vee$, π_2^∞, $(\pi_2^\infty)^\vee$, respectively, and $\phi\in\mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K,A_\mu,\varepsilon)$, $\phi_{\mathsf{c}}\in\mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K,A_{\mu^{\mathsf{c}}},-\varepsilon)$, the identity*

$$\begin{aligned}&\mathrm{vol}(K)^2\cdot\langle\mathrm{FJ}(f_1,f_2;\phi)_K,\mathrm{FJ}(f_1^\vee,f_2^\vee;\phi_{\mathsf{c}})_K\rangle^{\mathrm{BBP}}_{X_K\times X_K,A_\mu}\\&=\frac{\prod_{i=1}^n L(i,\mu^i_{E/F})}{2^{s(\Pi_1)+s(\Pi_2)}}\cdot\frac{L'(\frac12,\Pi_1\times\Pi_2\otimes\mu)}{L(1,\Pi_1,\mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n})\cdot L(1,\Pi_2,\mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n})}\\&\quad\cdot\beta(f_1,f_1^\vee,f_2,f_2^\vee,\phi,\phi_{\mathsf{c}})\end{aligned}$$

holds. Here,

- *$\mu^{\mathsf{c}}:=\mu\circ\mathsf{c}$ is the c-conjugation of μ; and we may identify $A_{\mu^{\mathsf{c}}}$ with $A_\mu^\vee$ (Proposition 4.6);*
- *$\mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K,A_\mu,\varepsilon)$ (resp. $\mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K,A_{\mu^{\mathsf{c}}},-\varepsilon)$) is the intersection of $\mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K,A_\mu)$ (resp. $\mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K,A_{\mu^{\mathsf{c}}})$) and $\Omega(\mu,\varepsilon)$ (resp. $\Omega(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},-\varepsilon)$);*
- *$\mathrm{vol}(K)$ is the normalized volume of K (Definition 4.22);*
- *$\langle\ ,\ \rangle^{\mathrm{BBP}}_{X_K\times X_K,A_\mu}$ is a variant of the (conjectural) Beilinson–Bloch height pairing, which we call the Beilinson–Bloch–Poincaré height pairing, which is a bilinear map*

  $$\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K\times X_K\times A_\mu)^0_{\mathbb{C}}\times\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K\times X_K\times A_\mu^\vee)^0_{\mathbb{C}}\to\mathbb{C};$$

- *$s(\Pi_i)$ has appeared in Definition 1.2;*
- *$\mathrm{As}^\pm$ stand for the two Asai representations (see, for example,* [GGP12a, Section 7]*); and*
- *β is a certain normalized matrix coefficient integral defined immediately after Conjecture 4.33.*

In order to transfer the height pairing in the above conjecture to some other pairing without A_μ, we introduce a variant of the cycle $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1,f_2;\phi)_K$ via replacing the diagonal Δ^3X_K by a modified diagonal $\Delta^3_zX_K$, which we denote by $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1,f_2;\phi)^z_K$. It is actually equal to $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1,f_2;\phi)_K$ as elements in $\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K\times X_K\times A_\mu)^0_{\mathbb{C}}$ if the injectivity of the ℓ-adic Abel–Jacobi map is granted. Thus, we also formulate a variant of the above refined arithmetic Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture as Conjecture 4.37.

Remark 1.6. We expect that the Fourier–Jacobi cycles can also be used to bound Selmer groups for the Rankin–Selberg motive associated to $\Pi_1 \times \Pi_2 \otimes \mu$, just as what we have done for $\mathrm{O}(3) \times \mathrm{O}(4)$ [Liu16] and for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n+1)$ [LTXZZ] using diagonal cycles.

1.2. A relative trace formula approach

For the case of central L-values for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$, namely the relation (1.1), the author developed a relative trace formula approach in [Liu14] generalizing the Jacquet–Rallis relative trace formula, which was later carried out by Hang Xue [Xue14, Xue16]. Thus, it is natural to expect a relative trace formula approach toward Conjecture 1.5 as well, similar to what Wei Zhang did for the case $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n+1)$ [Zha12]. However, our situation is much more complicated due to both the construction of the cycle $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)$ and the height pairing itself. Nevertheless, we still find such an approach after several reduction steps for the height pairing in Conjecture 1.5, or rather its variant Conjecture 4.37. In order to avoid extra technical difficulty, in this article, we only discuss the relative trace formula for the case where $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ is already proper, which we will now assume.

The first reduction step is the following theorem, which we refer as the *doubling formula for CM data.*

Theorem 1.7 (Proposition 5.10, (5.8), and Proposition 5.15)**.** *Let the notation be as in Conjecture 1.5 (or rather Conjecture 4.37). For $i = 1, 2$, let $\boldsymbol{f}_i \coloneqq f_i^{\mathrm{t}} * f_i^{\vee}$ be the convolution of the transpose of f_i and $f_i^{\vee}$. If we write $\boldsymbol{f}_1 = \sum_s d_s \mathbb{1}_{g_s^{-1} K \cap K g_s^{-1}}$ as a finite sum with $d_s \in \mathbb{C}$ and $g_s \in \mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$, then the identity*

$$\begin{aligned}\mathrm{vol}(K)^2 \cdot \langle \mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K^z, \mathrm{FJ}(f_1^\vee, f_2^\vee; \phi_{\mathtt{c}})_K^z \rangle^{\mathrm{BBP}}_{X_K \times X_K, A_\mu} \\ = \sum_s d_s \cdot \mathcal{I}^z_{K_s}(\mathrm{L}_{g_s} \boldsymbol{f}_2, \boldsymbol{\phi}_s)\end{aligned}$$

holds, in which

- $K_s \coloneqq K \cap g_s K g_s^{-1}$,
- $\mathrm{L}_{g_s} \boldsymbol{f}_2$ *is the left translation of* $\boldsymbol{f}_2$ *by* g_s,
- $\boldsymbol{\phi}_s \in \mathscr{S}(\mathbf{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty))^{K_s}$ *is a Schwartz function determined by* $(\phi, g_s \phi_{\mathtt{c}})$ *via* (5.4)*, and*
- *we put, for general* $K \subseteq \mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$, $\boldsymbol{f} \in \mathscr{C}_c^\infty(K \backslash \mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)/K, \mathbb{C})$, *and* $\boldsymbol{\phi} \in \mathscr{S}(\mathbf{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty))^K$,

$$\mathcal{I}^z_K(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi}) \coloneqq \langle \mathtt{p}^*_{135} \Delta^3_z X_K, (\Delta X_K \times \mathtt{T}^{\boldsymbol{f}}_K \times Z^{\heartsuit}_K).\mathtt{p}^*_{246} \Delta^3_z X_K \rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{X_K^6},$$

> *where $Z_K^\heartsuit$ is a (formal sum of) divisor on $X_K \times X_K$ such that its restriction to the diagonal ΔX_K is Kudla's generating series of special divisors associated to $\boldsymbol{\phi}$ (Definition 5.3).*

Moreover, if $\boldsymbol{f} \otimes \boldsymbol{\phi}$ is regularly supported at some nonarchimedean place v of F (Definition 5.14), then the cycles $\mathtt{p}_{135}^*\Delta^3 X_K$ and $(\Delta X_K \times \mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}} \times Z_K^\heartsuit).\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3 X_K$ have empty intersection on X_K^6.

Thus, it suffices to study the functional $\mathcal{I}_K^z(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi})$. We now assume that $\boldsymbol{f} \otimes \boldsymbol{\phi}$ is regularly supported at some nonarchimedean place v of F. Then the definition of the Beilinson–Bloch height pairing provides us with a decomposition

$$\mathcal{I}_K^z(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi}) = \sum_u \mathcal{I}_K^z(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi})_u$$

into local heights over all places u of E. In what follows, we will study an approximation of the local term $\mathcal{I}_K^z(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi})_u$ at certain places u by ignoring z.

To continue the discussion, we need some notation. For integers $r, s \geqslant 1$, denote by $\mathrm{Mat}_{r,s}$ the scheme over $\mathbb{Z}$ of r-by-s matrices. For $n \geqslant 1$, we put $\mathrm{M}_n := \mathrm{Mat}_{n,1} \times \mathrm{Mat}_{1,n}$; and let S_n be the O_F-subscheme of $\mathrm{Res}_{O_E/O_F} \mathrm{Mat}_{n,n}$ consisting of matrices g satisfying $g \cdot g^{\mathtt{c}} = \mathrm{I}_n$, known as the symmetric space. In view of the relative trace formula developed in [Liu14], we are looking for test functions $\tilde{\boldsymbol{f}} \in \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{S}_n(\mathbf{A}_F))$ and $\tilde{\boldsymbol{\phi}} \in \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{M}_n(\mathbf{A}_F))$ such that $\mathcal{I}_K^z(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi})$ can be compared to another functional $\mathcal{J}(\tilde{\boldsymbol{f}}, \tilde{\boldsymbol{\phi}})$ which encodes the right-hand side of Conjecture 1.5. In this article, we only discuss the term $\mathcal{I}_K(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi})_\mathfrak{p}$ and local components $\tilde{\boldsymbol{f}}_\mathfrak{p}, \tilde{\boldsymbol{\phi}}_\mathfrak{p}$ when $\mathfrak{p}$ is a good inert prime of F (Definition 5.16), also regarded as a place of E.

Let $\mathfrak{p}$ be a good inert prime. Then X_K has a canonical integral smooth model $\mathcal{X}_K$ over $O_{E_\mathfrak{p}}$; the Hecke operator $\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}}$ extends naturally to $\mathcal{X}_K$ by taking Zariski closure; and we also have a natural extension of $Z_K^\heartsuit$ to a (formal sum of) divisor $\mathcal{Z}_K^\heartsuit$ on $\mathcal{X}_K \times_{O_{E_\mathfrak{p}}} \mathcal{X}_K$. We define the *local arithmetic invariant functional* at $\mathfrak{p}$ to be

$$\begin{aligned}&\mathcal{I}_K(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi})_\mathfrak{p}\\ &:= 2\log|O_F/\mathfrak{p}| \cdot \chi\left(\mathcal{O}(\mathtt{p}_{135}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K) \otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_K^6}} \mathcal{O}((\Delta\mathcal{X}_K \times \mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}} \times \mathcal{Z}_K^\heartsuit).\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K)\right)\end{aligned}$$

as an intersection number of algebraic cycles on $\mathcal{X}_K^6$, the sixfold self fiber product of $\mathcal{X}_K$ over $O_{E_\mathfrak{p}}$, where χ denotes the Euler–Poincaré characteristic. The following result provides an orbital decomposition of $\mathcal{I}_K(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi})_\mathfrak{p}$, which is the key for the comparison of relative trace formulae.

Theorem 1.8 (Theorem 5.25)**.** *Let $K, \boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi}$ be as above such that $\boldsymbol{f} \otimes \boldsymbol{\phi}$ is regularly supported at some nonarchimedean place v of F. Then for a good inert prime $\mathfrak{p}$, the identity*

$$\mathcal{I}_K(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi})_{\mathfrak{p}} = 2\log|O_F/\mathfrak{p}| \cdot \sum_{(\bar{\xi},\bar{x}) \in [\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F) \times \bar{\mathrm{V}}(E))]_{\mathrm{rs}}} \mathrm{e}^{-2\pi \cdot \mathrm{Tr}_{F/\mathbb{Q}}(\bar{x},\bar{x})_{\bar{\mathrm{V}}}} \mathrm{Orb}(\bar{\boldsymbol{f}}^{\mathfrak{p}}, \bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}^{\mathfrak{p}}; \bar{\xi}, \bar{x}) \cdot \chi\left(\mathcal{O}_{\Gamma_{\bar{\xi}}} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{N}^2}} \mathcal{O}_{\Delta\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x})}\right)$$

holds, where

- *$\bar{\mathrm{V}}$ is a hermitian space over E satisfying $\bar{\mathrm{V}} \otimes_F \mathbf{A}_F^{\mathfrak{p}} \simeq \mathbf{V} \otimes_{\mathbf{A}_F} \mathbf{A}_F^{\mathfrak{p}}$,*
- *the orbital integral is defined as*

$$\mathrm{Orb}(\bar{\boldsymbol{f}}^{\mathfrak{p}}, \bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}^{\mathfrak{p}}; \bar{\xi}, \bar{x}) := \int_{\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\mathfrak{p}})} \bar{\boldsymbol{f}}^{\mathfrak{p}}(\bar{g}^{-1}\bar{\xi}\bar{g})\bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}^{\mathfrak{p}}(\bar{g}^{-1}\bar{x})\,\mathrm{d}\bar{g},$$

- *$\chi\left(\mathcal{O}_{\Gamma_{\bar{\xi}}} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{N}^2}} \mathcal{O}_{\Delta\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x})}\right)$ is a certain intersection number defined on a relative Rapoport–Zink space.*

We refer to Theorem 5.25 for the precise meaning of all the notation.

The term $\chi\left(\mathcal{O}_{\Gamma_{\bar{\xi}}} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{N}^2}} \mathcal{O}_{\Delta\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x})}\right)$ is the one that is related to the derivative of L-function, more precisely, to the derivative of local orbital integrals at $\mathfrak{p}$ in the decomposition of $\mathcal{J}(\tilde{\boldsymbol{f}}, \tilde{\boldsymbol{\phi}})$. The precise relation is the content of the *arithmetic fundamental lemma for* $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$, which we introduce in the next subsection.

1.3. Arithmetic fundamental lemma for $\mathbf{U}(n) \times \mathbf{U}(n)$

In this subsection, we introduce the arithmetic fundamental lemma for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$. Since the question is purely local, we will shift our notation slightly from the previous discussion. Moreover, we will allow n to be an arbitrary positive integer since the discussion makes sense even for $n = 1$.

Let F be a finite extension of $\mathbb{Q}_p$, with residue cardinality q. Let E/F be an unramified quadratic extension, and $\breve{E}$ a completed maximal unramified extension of E with k its residue field.

We recall some definitions and facts from [Liu14, Section 5.3]. We say that a pair $(\zeta, y) \in \mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)$ is *regular semisimple* if the matrix $(y_2\zeta^{i+j-2}y_1)_{i,j=1}^n$ is non-degenerate, where we write $y = (y_1, y_2) \in \mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(F)$

$\times \mathrm{Mat}_{1,n}(F)$. If (ζ, y) is regular semisimple, we define its *transfer factor* to be

$$\omega(\zeta, y) := \mu_{E/F}(\det(y_1, \zeta y_1, \dots, \zeta^{n-1} y_1)).$$

The group $\mathrm{GL}_n(F)$ acts on $\mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)$ by the formula $(\zeta, y)g = (g^{-1}\zeta g, g^{-1}y_1, y_2 g)$, which preserves regular semisimple elements. We denote by $[\mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)]_{\mathrm{rs}}$ the set of regular semisimple $\mathrm{GL}_n(F)$-orbits.

Let V_n^+ (resp. V_n^-) be a hermitian space over E of rank n whose determinant has even (resp. odd) valuation. For $\delta = \pm$, we say that a pair $(\xi, x) \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^\delta)(F) \times \mathrm{V}_n^\delta(E)$ is *regular semisimple* if $\{x, \xi x, \dots, \xi^{n-1} x\}$ are linearly independent. The group $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^\delta)(F)$ acts on $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^\delta)(F) \times \mathrm{V}_n^\delta(E)$ by the formula $(\xi, x)g = (g^{-1}\xi g, g^{-1}x)$, which preserves regular semisimple elements. We denote by $[\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^\delta)(F) \times \mathrm{V}_n^\delta(E)]_{\mathrm{rs}}$ the set of regular semisimple $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^\delta)(F)$-orbits. We say that $(\zeta, y) \in [\mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)]_{\mathrm{rs}}$ and $(\xi, x) \in [\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^\delta)(F) \times \mathrm{V}_n^\delta(E)]_{\mathrm{rs}}$ *match* if ζ and ξ have the same characteristic polynomial and $y_2\zeta^i y_1 = (\xi^i x, x)$ for $0 \leqslant i \leqslant n-1$. The matching relation induces a bijection

$$[\mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)]_{\mathrm{rs}} \simeq [\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^+)(F) \times \mathrm{V}_n^+(E)]_{\mathrm{rs}} \coprod [\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^-)(F) \times \mathrm{V}_n^-(E)]_{\mathrm{rs}}.$$

Denote by $[\mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)]_{\mathrm{rs}}^\pm \subseteq [\mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)]_{\mathrm{rs}}$ the subset corresponding to orbits in $[\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^\pm)(F) \times \mathrm{V}_n^\pm(E)]_{\mathrm{rs}}$. Then a regular semisimple orbit (ζ, y) belongs to $[\mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)]_{\mathrm{rs}}^\delta$ for $\delta = +$ (resp. $\delta = -$) if and only if the $\det((y_2\zeta^{i+j-2}y_1)_{i,j=1}^n)$ has even (resp. odd) valuation.

Now we introduce the relevant orbital integral. For a regular semisimple pair $(\zeta, y) \in \mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)$ and a pair of Schwartz functions $f \in \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{S}_n(F))$, $\phi \in \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{M}_n(F))$, we define

$$\mathrm{Orb}(s; f, \phi; \zeta, y) := \int_{\mathrm{GL}_n(F)} f(g^{-1}\zeta g)\phi(g^{-1}y_1, y_2 g)\mu_{E/F}(\det g)|\det g|_E^s \,\mathrm{d}g,$$

where $\mathrm{d}g$ is the Haar measure under which $\mathrm{GL}_n(O_F)$ has volume 1. It is clear that the product $\omega(\zeta, y)\,\mathrm{Orb}(0; f, \phi; \zeta, y)$ depends only on the $\mathrm{GL}_n(F)$-orbit of (ζ, y). We recall the following conjecture from [Liu14].

Conjecture 1.9 (Relative fundamental lemma for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$)**.** *For every regular semisimple orbit $(\zeta, y) \in [\mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)]_{\mathrm{rs}}$, we have*

(1) if $(\zeta, y) \in [\mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)]_{\mathrm{rs}}^-$, then

$$\omega(\zeta, y)\,\mathrm{Orb}(0; \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{S}_n(O_F)}, \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{M}_n(O_F)}; \zeta, y) = 0;$$

(2) if $(\zeta, y) \in [\mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)]^+_{\mathrm{rs}}$*, then*

$$\omega(\zeta, y)\,\mathrm{Orb}(0; \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{S}_n(O_F)}, \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{M}_n(O_F)}; \zeta, y) = \int_{\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^+)} \mathbb{1}_{K_n}(g^{-1}\xi g)\mathbb{1}_{\Lambda_n}(g^{-1}x)\,\mathrm{d}g, \tag{1.2}$$

where $(\xi, x) \in [\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^+)(F) \times \mathrm{V}_n^+(E)]_{\mathrm{rs}}$ *is the unique orbit that matches* (ζ, y)*,* Λ_n *is a self-dual lattice in* V_n^+*,* K_n *is the stabilizer of* Λ_n*, and* $\mathrm{d}g$ *is the Haar measure on* $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^+)$ *under which* K_n *has volume* 1*.*

Remark 1.10. Conjecture 1.9(1) is known by [Liu14, Proposition 5.14]. Conjecture 1.9(2) is known for p sufficiently large by [Liu14, Theorem 5.15].

Now we describe the arithmetic fundamental lemma, where in (1.2) we replace the left-hand side by its derivative and the right-hand side by a certain intersection number on a (relative) Rapoport–Zink space. We start by recalling the notion of relative Rapoport–Zink spaces. For an $O_{\breve{E}}$-scheme S, a *unitary* O_F*-module of signature* (r, s) with integers $r, s \geqslant 0$ is a triple (X, i, λ), in which

- X is a strict O_F-module over S of dimension $r + s$ and O_F-height $2(r + s)$ over S,
- $i\colon O_E \to \mathrm{End}_S(X)$ is an action compatible with the O_F-module structure satisfying that for every $e \in O_E$ the characteristic polynomial of $i(e)$ on $\mathrm{Lie}_S(X)$ is given by $(T - a^{\mathtt{c}})^r(T - a)^s \in \mathcal{O}_S[T]$,
- $\lambda\colon X \to X^\vee$ is a principal polarization such that the associated Rosati involution induces the conjugation on O_E.

We say that (X, i, λ) is supersingular if X is a supersingular strict O_F-module.

We fix a supersingular unitary O_F-module $(\boldsymbol{X}_0, \boldsymbol{i}_0, \boldsymbol{\lambda}_0)$ of signature $(1, 0)$ over $O_{\breve{E}}$, which is unique up to isomorphism. For every integer $n \geqslant 1$, we also choose a supersingular unitary O_F-module $(\boldsymbol{X}_n, \boldsymbol{i}_n, \boldsymbol{\lambda}_n)$ of signature $(n-1, 1)$ over k, which is unique up to O_E-linear isogeny preserving the polarization up to scalars. Let $\mathcal{N}_n$ be the relative Rapoport–Zink space parameterizing quasi-isogenies of $(\boldsymbol{X}_n, \boldsymbol{i}_n, \boldsymbol{\lambda}_n)$ of height zero. More precisely, it is a formal scheme over $O_{\breve{E}}$ such that for every scheme S over $O_{\breve{E}}$ on which p is locally nilpotent, $\mathcal{N}_n(S)$ is the set of isomorphism classes of quadruples $(X, i, \lambda; \rho)$, where

- (X, i, λ) is a unitary O_F-module over S of signature $(n - 1, 1)$,
- $\rho\colon X \times_S S_k \to \boldsymbol{X}_n \times_k S_k$ is an O_E-linear quasi-isogeny (of height zero), such that $\rho^*\boldsymbol{\lambda}_n = \lambda$. Here, we put $S_k \coloneqq S \otimes_{O_{\breve{E}}} k$.

It is known that $\mathcal{N}_n$ is formally smooth over $O_{\breve{E}}$ of relative dimension $n-1$. See [Mih20, Section 3.1] for more details.

We recall the notion of formal special divisors from [KR11]. Put $\Lambda_n \coloneqq \mathrm{Hom}_k((\boldsymbol{X}_{0k}, \boldsymbol{i}_{0k}), (\boldsymbol{X}_n, \boldsymbol{i}_n))$ and $\mathrm{V}_n^- \coloneqq (\Lambda_n)_{\mathbb{Q}}$. Then V_n^- is an E-vectors space of rank n equipped with a hermitian form

$$(x,y) = \boldsymbol{i}_{0k}^{-1}\left(\boldsymbol{\lambda}_{0k}^{-1} \circ y^\vee \circ \boldsymbol{\lambda}_n \circ x\right) \in E.$$

If we denote by Λ_n^* the dual lattice of Λ_n under the above hermitian form, then we have $\Lambda_n \subseteq \Lambda_n^*$ and that the length of the O_E-module Λ_n^*/Λ_n is odd. In particular, the determinant of V_n^- has odd valuation, justifying its notation.

Definition 1.11. For every $x \in \mathrm{V}_n^-$ that is nonzero, we define $\mathcal{Z}_n(x)$ to be the subfunctor of $\mathcal{N}_n$ such that for every scheme S over $O_{\breve{E}}$ on which p is locally nilpotent, $\mathcal{Z}_n(x)(S)$ consists of $(X, i, \lambda; \rho)$ satisfying that the composite homomorphism

$$\boldsymbol{X}_{0k} \times_k S_k \xrightarrow{x} \boldsymbol{X}_n \times_k S_k \xrightarrow{\rho^{-1}} X \times_S S_k$$

extends to an O_E-linear homomorphism $\boldsymbol{X}_0 \times_{O_{\breve{E}}} S \to X$ over S.

By [RZ96, Proposition 2.9], $\mathcal{Z}_n(x)$ is a closed sub-formal scheme of $\mathcal{N}_n$. For every $g \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n)(F)$, let $\rho_g \colon \boldsymbol{X}_n \to \boldsymbol{X}_n$ be the unique O_E-linear quasi-isogeny (of height zero) such that $gx = \rho_g \circ x$ for every $x \in \mathrm{V}_n$; and, by abuse of notation, let $g \colon \mathcal{N}_n \to \mathcal{N}_n$ be the (auto)morphism sending $(X, i, \lambda; \rho)$ to $(X, i, \lambda; \rho_g \circ \rho)$. We denote by $\Gamma_g \subseteq \mathcal{N}_n^2 \coloneqq \mathcal{N}_n \times_{O_{\breve{E}}} \mathcal{N}_n$ the graph of g.

Conjecture 1.12 (Arithmetic fundamental lemma for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$)**.** *For every regular semisimple orbit $(\zeta, y) \in [\mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)]_{\mathrm{rs}}^-$, we have*

$$\begin{aligned} &-\omega(\zeta,y)\left.\frac{\mathrm{d}}{\mathrm{d}s}\right|_{s=0} \mathrm{Orb}(s; \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{S}_n(O_F)}, \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{M}_n(O_F)}; \zeta, y) \\ &\qquad = 2\log q \cdot \chi\left(\mathcal{O}_{\Gamma_\xi} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{N}_n^2}} \mathcal{O}_{\Delta\mathcal{Z}_n(x)}\right), \end{aligned}$$

where $(\xi, x) \in [\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^-)(F) \times \mathrm{V}_n^-(E)]_{\mathrm{rs}}$ is the unique orbit that matches (ζ, y), and χ denotes the Euler–Poincaré characteristic.

In Conjecture 1.12, it follows from Conjecture 1.9(1), which is known, that the left-hand side depends only on the $\mathrm{GL}_n(F)$-orbit of (ζ, y).

Remark 1.13. During the referee process of this article, Wei Zhang [Zha21, Proposition 4.12 & Remark 3.1] has shown that his arithmetic fundamental lemma for $\mathrm{U}(n)\times\mathrm{U}(n+1)$ is equivalent to our arithmetic fundamental lemma for $\mathrm{U}(n)\times\mathrm{U}(n)$ (with respect to the same field extension E/F) when the residue cardinality of F is greater than n. In particular, we find

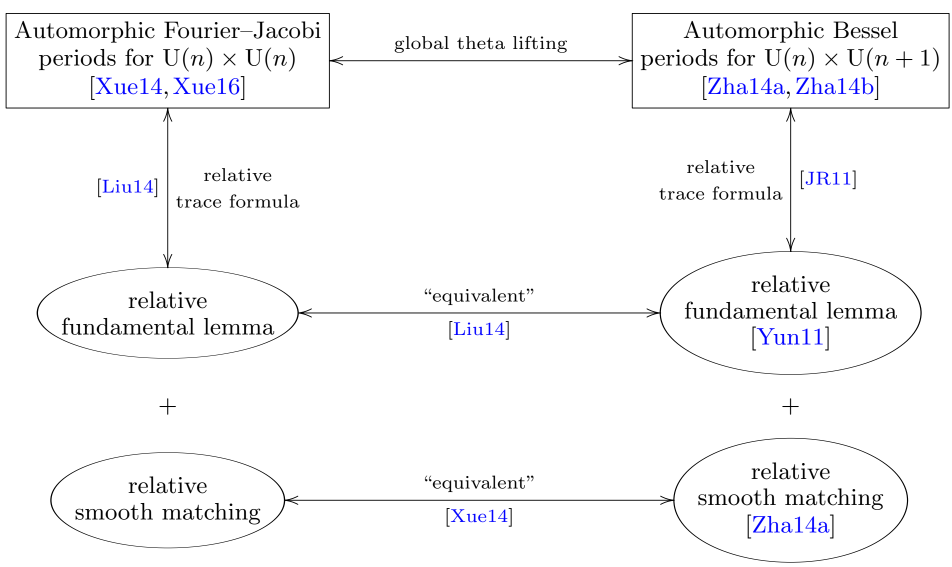
(1) Conjecture 1.12 holds when $n \leqslant 2$ and q is odd, by [Zha12, Theorem 2.10 & Theorem 5.5].
(2) Conjecture 1.12 holds when $F = \mathbb{Q}_p$ with $p > n$, by [Zha21, Theorem 15.1].

Remark 1.14. In Section A, Chao Li and Yihang Zhu proved Conjecture 1.12 (for arbitrary E/F) in the so-called minuscule case, similar to the case of $\mathrm{U}(n)\times\mathrm{U}(n+1)$. In the case of $\mathrm{U}(n)\times\mathrm{U}(n)$, we say that a regular semisimple pair $(\xi, x) \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^-)(F)\times\mathrm{V}_n^-(E)$ is *minuscule* if the O_E-lattice $L_{\xi,x}$ generated by $\{x, \xi x, \cdots, \xi^{n-1}x\}$ satisfies $\varpi L_{\xi,x}^* \subseteq L_{\xi,x} \subseteq L_{\xi,x}^*$ where ϖ is a uniformizer of F and $L_{\xi,x}^*$ denotes the dual lattice.

1.4. Relation between $\mathrm{U}(n)\times\mathrm{U}(n)$ and $\mathrm{U}(n)\times\mathrm{U}(n+1)$

In this subsection, we make an informal comparison between the two scenarios of $\mathrm{U}(n)\times\mathrm{U}(n)$ and $\mathrm{U}(n)\times\mathrm{U}(n+1)$, for both automorphic periods/central values and arithmetic periods/central derivatives.

The following diagram compares the automorphic periods and the relative trace formula approaches toward the global GGP conjectures in the two scenarios.



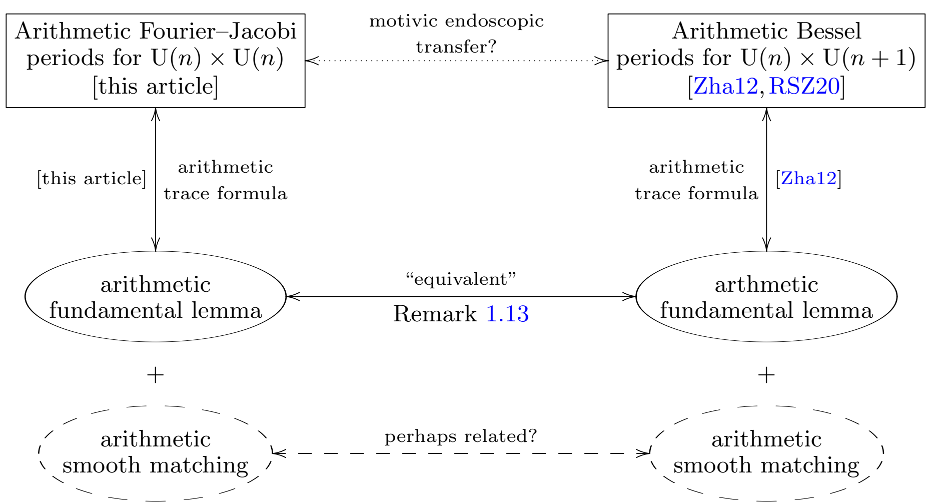
In the first line, if we assume Conjecture 1.15 below,[3] then the method of global theta lifting should provide an equivalence between the two sides when all n are considered. In fact, Xue [Xue14, Xue16] has essentially verified the deduction for both directions starting from two stable tempered representations on $\mathrm{U}(n)$ that satisfy Conjecture 1.15.

Conjecture 1.15. *Let* V *be a hermitian space over* E *of rank* $n \geqslant 1$*. Let* π *be a tempered cuspidal automorphic representation of* $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F)$*. If* n *is even (resp. odd), then there exists a conjugate orthogonal (resp. conjugate symplectic) automorphic character* μ *of* $\mathbf{A}_E^\times$ *such that*

$$L(\tfrac{1}{2}, \Pi \otimes \mu) \neq 0,$$

where Π *is the standard base change of* π *to* $\mathrm{GL}_n(\mathbf{A}_E)$*.*

The following diagram compares the arithmetic periods and the relative trace formula approaches toward the arithmetic GGP conjectures in the two scenarios.



In the first line, the Tate conjecture over number fields predicts a motivic endoscopic lifting (or motivic theta lifting) that transfers algebraic cycles from one side to the other. Thus, we expect that our Fourier–Jacobi cycles should be related to the diagonal cycle considered in [Zha12] in a certain way. However, at this moment, the motivic endoscopic lifting seems far

[3] Recently, Dihua Jiang and Lei Zhang [JZ20] have confirmed this conjecture when $n \leqslant 4$. Of course, when $n \leqslant 2$, it was already known before.

out of reach. For the two dashed bubbles surrounding "arithmetic smooth matching", we do not how to formulate a precise conjecture in general. However, in some special cases for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n+1)$, there are some results [RSZ17, RSZ18].

1.5. Relation with the arithmetic triple product formula

In this subsection, we compare our arithmetic GGP conjecture for $n = 2$ with the (conjectural) arithmetic triple product formula, which can be regarded as the arithmetic GGP for $\mathrm{O}(3) \times \mathrm{O}(4)$ in which $\mathrm{O}(4)$ has trivial discriminant. Lots of progress has been made toward the arithmetic triple product formula; see, for example, [GK92, GK93, YZZ].

We first make a quick review of the arithmetic triple product formula following the line of [YZZ]. Consider three irreducible cuspidal automorphic representations $\sigma_1, \sigma_2, \sigma_3$ of $\mathrm{GL}_2(\mathbf{A}_F)$ of parallel weight 2 such that the product of their central characters is trivial and $\epsilon(\frac{1}{2}, \sigma_1 \times \sigma_2 \times \sigma_3) = -1$. Then the local dichotomy of triple product invariant functionals provides us with a totally definite incoherent quaternion algebra $\mathbf{B}$ over $\mathbf{A}_F$, unique up to isomorphism. Let $\{Y_U\}_U$ be the system of compactified Shimura curves over F associated to $\mathbf{B}$ indexed by open compact subsets $U \subseteq (\mathbf{B} \otimes_{\mathbf{A}_F} \mathbf{A}_F^\infty)^\times$. For $i = 1, 2, 3$, let A_i be the abelian variety of strict $\mathrm{GL}(2)$-type over F associated to σ_i. For morphisms $g_i \colon Y_U \to A_i$ for $i = 1, 2, 3$, we have the Gross–Kudla–Schoen cycle, which is essentially

$$\mathrm{GKS}(g_1, g_2, g_3)_U \coloneqq (g_1 \times g_2 \times g_3)_* \Delta^3 Y_U \in \mathrm{CH}_1(A_1 \times A_2 \times A_3)_{\mathbb{Q}}.$$

The arithmetic triple product formula predicts a relation between the Beilinson–Bloch height of $\mathrm{GKS}(g_1, g_2, g_3)_U$ and the central derivative $L'(\frac{1}{2}, \sigma_1 \times \sigma_2 \times \sigma_3)$.

Now we discuss its connection with our case. Suppose that

(1) σ_3 is the theta lifting of $\mu^{\mathrm{alg}} \coloneqq \mu \cdot |\ |_E^{-1/2}$ for an automorphic character μ of $\mathbf{A}_E^\times$ which is necessarily conjugate symplectic of weight one;
(2) for $i = 1, 2$, the base change of σ_i to $\mathrm{GL}_2(\mathbf{A}_E)$, denoted by Π_i, has trivial central character.

Then Π_1 and Π_2 are both relevant; and we may take A_μ to be $A_3 \otimes_F E$. Let $\mathbf{V}$ be the unique up to isomorphism totally positive definite (incoherent) hermitian space over $\mathbf{A}_E$ of rank 2 such that for every nonarchimedean place v of F, $\mathbf{V} \otimes_{\mathbf{A}_F} F_v$ is isotropic if and only if $\mathbf{B} \otimes_{\mathbf{A}_F} F_v$ is split. We recall our compactified unitary Shimura curve $\{X_K\}_K$ associated to $\mathbf{V}$. For morphisms

$f_i\colon X_K \to A_i \otimes_F E$ for $i = 1, 2$ and $\phi\colon X_K \to A_\mu = A_3 \otimes_F E$, we have the Fourier–Jacobi cycle, which is essentially

$$\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K \coloneqq (f_1 \times f_2 \times \phi)_* \Delta^3 X_K \in \mathrm{CH}_1((A_1 \times A_2 \times A_3) \otimes_F E)_{\mathbb{Q}}.$$

Conjecture 1.5 predicts a relation between the Beilinson–Bloch height of $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K$ and the central derivative $L'(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi_1 \times \Pi_2 \otimes \mu)$. It is possible to show *a priori* that the height of $\mathrm{GKS}(g_1, g_2, g_3)_U$ for some choice of U, g_1, g_2, g_3 is related to the height of $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K$ for some choice of K, f_1, f_2, ϕ. This is not surprising as in this case we have the equality

$$L(s, \sigma_1 \times \sigma_2 \times \sigma_3) = L(s, \Pi_1 \times \Pi_2 \otimes \mu)$$

between L-functions. In other words, our work in the special case where $n = 2$ provides a relative trace formula approach toward the arithmetic triple product formula in the situation where (1) and (2) are satisfied. However, we point out that not all cases for $\mathrm{U}(2) \times \mathrm{U}(2)$ arise from the arithmetic triple product formula in this way since Π_1 and Π_2 are not necessarily base change from $\mathrm{GL}_2(\mathbf{A}_F)$.

1.6. Structure of the article

The main part of the article contains five sections.

In Section 2, we study the Albanese varieties. In Subsection 2.1, we introduce the Albanese varieties of proper smooth varieties over a general base field, and study their polarizations. In Subsection 2.2, we generalize the construction of Picard motives using not necessarily ample divisors as cutting divisors, which will be used in Subsection 3.3.

In Section 3, we make some preparation for algebraic cycles and height pairings for general varieties. In Subsection 3.1, we review the notion of algebraic cycles and correspondences. In Subsection 3.2, we review the construction of the Beilinson–Bloch height pairing and introduce our variant – the Beilinson–Bloch–Poincaré height pairing. In Subsection 3.3, we discuss the construction of some Künneth–Chow projectors for curves and surfaces, which will be used in the modified diagonal $\Delta^3_z X_K$ later.

In Section 4, we construct Fourier–Jacobi cycles and state our main conjectures. In Subsection 4.1, we construct the category of CM data for a conjugate symplectic automorphic character μ of weight one. In Subsection 4.2, we introduce our Shimura varieties and study their Albanese varieties; in particular, we prove Theorem 1.1. In Subsection 4.3, we construct Fourier–Jacobi cycles and show that they are homologically trivial. In Subsection 4.4, we prove the remaining part of Theorem 1.3, and propose various versions of the arithmetic Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$.

In Section 5, we discuss a relative trace formula approach toward the arithmetic GGP conjecture for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$. In Subsection 5.1, we prove the doubling formula for CM data in Theorem 1.7. In Subsection 5.2, we introduce the global arithmetic invariant functional and its local version at good inert primes for which we perform some preliminary computation. In Subsection 5.3, we prove Theorem 1.8.

The article also contains four appendices.

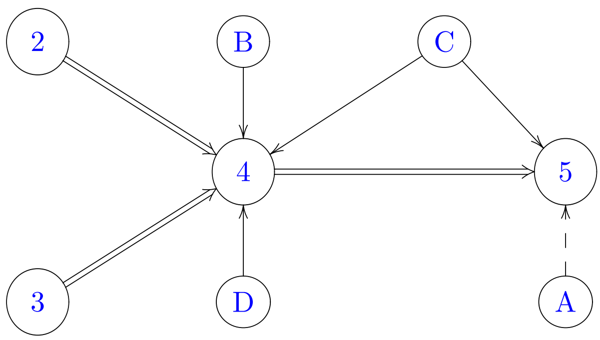
In Section A, provided by Chao Li and Yihang Zhu, we confirm the arithmetic fundamental lemma in the minuscule case.

In Section B, we prove some results about global theta lifting for unitary groups, namely, Theorem B.4 and its two corollaries. Those results are only used in the proof of Proposition 4.13. Thus, if the readers are willing to admit these results from the theory of automorphic forms, they are welcome to skip the entire section except the very short Subsection B.1 where we introduce some notation for the discrete automorphic spectrum.

In Section C, we summarize different versions of unitary Shimura varieties. In Subsection C.1, we recall Shimura varieties associated to isometry groups of hermitian spaces, which are of abelian type; we also introduce the Shimura varieties associated to incoherent hermitian spaces – they are the main geometric objects studied in this article. In Subsection C.2, we recall the well-known PEL type Shimura varieties associated to groups of rational similitude of skew-hermitian spaces, and their integral models at good primes, after Kottwitz. These Shimura varieties are only for the preparation of the next subsection, which are not logically needed in the main part of the article. In Subsection C.3, we summarize the connection of these two kinds of unitary Shimura varieties via the third one which possesses a moduli interpretation but is not of PEL type in the sense of Kottwitz, after [BHK+20, RSZ20]. In Subsection C.4, we discuss integral models of the third unitary Shimura varieties at good inert primes and their uniformization along the basic locus. The last two subsections are crucial to the discussion in Subsections 5.2 and 5.3.

In Section D, we compute the cohomology of Shimura curves associated to *isometry* groups of hermitian spaces of rank 2, as Galois–Hecke modules. In Subsection D.1, we collect some results about local oscillator representations of unitary groups of general rank. In Subsection D.2, we recall some facts and introduce some notation about cohomology of Shimura varieties in general. These two subsections will be used both in Section D and in the main part of the article. The last two subsections concern the cohomology of unitary Shimura curves, for the statements and for the proof, respectively. These statements are only used in the proof of Theorem 4.15 and Theorem 4.18 in the main part of the article, and are probably known to experts. However, we can not find any reference for the proofs or even for the statements themselves.

For readers' convenience, we summarize the logical dependence of the article in the following diagram.



1.7. Notation and conventions

General notation.

- For a set S, we denote by $\mathbb{1}_S$ the characteristic function of S.
- Suppose that we work in a category with finite products. Then
  - for a finite collection $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ of objects, the notation
  $$\mathrm{p}_{abc\cdots}\colon X_1 \times \cdots \times X_n \to X_a \times X_b \times X_c \times \cdots$$
  will, by default, stand for the projection to the factors labeled by the subset $\{a, b, c, \dots\} \subseteq \{1, \dots, n\}$;
  - for an abject X and an integer $r \geqslant 0$, we denote $\Delta^r\colon X \to X^r$ the diagonal morphism, and simply write Δ for Δ^2.
- All rings are commutative and unital; and ring homomorphisms preserve unity.
- For an abelian group A and a ring R, we put $A_R \coloneqq A \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} R$ as an R-module.
- For a field k, we denote by k^{ac} an abstract algebraic closure of k.
- The *bar* $^-$ only denotes the complex conjugation in $\mathbb{C}$. For example, for an element $x \in \mathbb{C} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} E$, $\overline{x}$ is obtained by only applying conjugation to the first factor.
- We denote by $\mathbb{C}^1$ the subgroup of $\mathbb{C}^\times$ consisting of z satisfying $z\overline{z} = 1$.

Notation in number theory.

- A reflex field is always a *subfield* of $\mathbb{C}$.
- Denote by $\mathbf{A}^\infty \coloneqq \widehat{\mathbb{Z}}_\mathbb{Q}$ the ring of finite adèles of $\mathbb{Q}$, and put $\mathbf{A} \coloneqq \mathbb{R} \times \mathbf{A}^\infty$.
- For a number field k, we put $\mathbf{A}_k \coloneqq \mathbf{A} \otimes_\mathbb{Q} k$ and $\mathbf{A}_k^\infty \coloneqq \mathbf{A}^\infty \otimes_\mathbb{Q} k$.
  - Denote by $|\ |_\mathbb{Q} \colon \mathbb{Q}^\times \backslash \mathbf{A}^\times \to \mathbb{R}_{>0}^\times$ the character, uniquely determined by the properties that $|x|_\mathbb{Q} = |x|$ for $x \in \mathbb{R}^\times$ and that $|\ |_\mathbb{Q}$ is trivial on $\widehat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times$. For every $s \in \mathbb{C}$, Put $|\ |_k^s \coloneqq |\ |_\mathbb{Q}^s \circ \mathrm{N}_{k/\mathbb{Q}} \colon k^\times \backslash \mathbf{A}_k^\times \to \mathbb{R}_{>0}^\times$.
  - Denote by $\psi_\mathbb{Q} \colon \mathbb{Q} \backslash \mathbf{A} \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ the character, uniquely determined by the properties that $\psi_\mathbb{Q}(x) = \exp(2\pi i x)$ for $x \in \mathbb{R}$ and that $\psi_\mathbb{Q}$ is trivial on $\widehat{\mathbb{Z}}$. Put $\psi_k \coloneqq \psi_\mathbb{Q} \circ \mathrm{Tr}_{k/\mathbb{Q}} \colon k \backslash \mathbf{A}_k \to \mathbb{C}^\times$, which we call the *standard additive character* for k.
- In local or global class field theory, the Artin reciprocity map always sends a uniformizer at a nonarchimedean place v to a geometric Frobenius element at v.

Notation in algebraic geometry.

- For a scheme S and a rational prime p, we denote by $\mathrm{Sch}_{/S}$ the category of schemes over S and by $\mathrm{Sch}'_{/S}$ the subcategory of those that are locally Noetherian. If $S = \operatorname{Spec} R$ is affine, then we simply replace S by R in the above notations.
- We denote by $\mathbb{G}_\mathrm{m} \coloneqq \operatorname{Spec} \mathbb{Z}[T, T^{-1}]$ the multiplicative group scheme over $\mathbb{Z}$. For integers $r, s \geqslant 1$, denote by $\mathrm{Mat}_{r,s}$ the scheme over $\mathbb{Z}$ of r-by-s matrices. For an integer $n \geqslant 1$, we put $\mathrm{M}_n \coloneqq \mathrm{Mat}_{n,1} \times \mathrm{Mat}_{1,n}$.
- For a ring R, a scheme X in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/R}$, and a ring R' over R, we usually write $X_{R'} \in \mathrm{Sch}_{/R'}$ instead of $X \times_{\operatorname{Spec} R} \operatorname{Spec} S$.
- For a ring R, a scheme $X \in \mathrm{Sch}_{/R}$ that is locally of finite type, a homomorphism $\tau \colon R \to \mathbb{C}$, and an abelian group Λ, we denote by $\mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{B},\tau}(X, \Lambda)$ the degree i singular cohomology of the underlying topological space of $X \otimes_{R,\tau} \mathbb{C}$ with coefficients in Λ. When R is a *subring* of $\mathbb{C}$ and τ is the inclusion, we suppress τ in the subscript.
- For a ring R, we denote by $\mathrm{D}^\mathrm{b}_\mathrm{fl}(R)$ the bounded derived category of R-modules whose cohomology consists of R-modules of finite length. For $\mathcal{F} \in \mathrm{D}^\mathrm{b}_\mathrm{fl}(R)$, we have the Euler–Poincaré characteristic $\chi(\mathcal{F}) \coloneqq \sum_i (-1)^i \operatorname{length}_R \mathrm{H}^i \mathcal{F}$. In general, for a (formal) scheme X over R and an element $\mathcal{F}$ in the derived category of $\mathcal{O}_X$-modules, we define its Euler–Poincaré characteristic $\chi(\mathcal{F})$ to be $\chi(\mathrm{R}s_*\mathcal{F})$ (resp. ∞) if $\mathrm{R}s_*\mathcal{F}$ belongs to $\mathrm{D}^\mathrm{b}_\mathrm{fl}(R)$ (resp. otherwise), where s is the structure morphism.

Acknowledgements. The author would like to thank Sungyoon Cho, Benedict Gross, Kai-Wen Lan, Chao Li, Xinyi Yuan, Shouwu Zhang, and Wei Zhang for helpful comments and discussion, and thank Chao Li and Yihang Zhu for providing Section A for the proof of the arithmetic fundamental lemma in the minuscule case. He thanks the anonymous referee for careful reading and valuable comments. The research of the author is partially supported by NSF grant DMS–1702019 and a Sloan Research Fellowship.

2. Albanese variety

In this section, we study the Albanese varieties. In Subsection 2.1, we introduce the Albanese varieties of proper smooth varieties over a general base field, and study their polarizations. In Subsection 2.2, we generalize the construction of Picard motives using not necessarily ample divisors as cutting divisors.

Let k be a field. We work in the category $\mathrm{Sch}_{/k}$.

2.1. Albanese variety and its polarization

Definition 2.1. Consider schemes $X, Y \in \mathrm{Sch}_{/k}$ of finite type.

(1) We denote by ∇X the smallest open and closed subscheme of $X \times X$ containing the diagonal ΔX. For every morphism $u\colon Y \to X$, $u \times u$ restricts to a morphism $\nabla u\colon \nabla Y \to \nabla X$.

(2) We say that a field k' over k *splits* X if every connected component of $X_{k'}$ is geometrically connected. For such k', we regard $\pi_0(X_{k'})$ as a scheme in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/k'}$, which induces a factorization of morphisms $X_{k'} \to \pi_0(X_{k'}) \to \operatorname{Spec} k'$ in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/k'}$. In particular, giving an element in $X(\pi_0(X_{k'}))$ is equivalent to giving an element in $X_i(k')$ for every connected component X_i of $X_{k'}$.

(3) Let $f\colon \nabla X \to Y$ be a morphism. For every field k' over k that splits X and every element $x \in X(\pi_0(X_{k'}))$, we denote by

$$f_x\colon X_{k'} \to Y_{k'}$$

the morphism such that its restriction to a connected component X_i is the restriction of $f_{k'}$ to $X_i \times_{k'} (x \cap X_i) \simeq X_i$.

The following proposition on the Albanese variety without rational base point is probably well-known. Since we can not find a precise reference for it, we include a proof.

Proposition 2.2. *Let X be a proper smooth scheme in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/k}$. Consider the functor $\underline{\mathrm{Alb}}_X$ on the category of abelian varieties A over k such that $\underline{\mathrm{Alb}}_X(A)$ is the set of morphisms $f\colon \nabla X \to A$ over k such that ΔX is contained in $f^{-1}0_A$. Then $\underline{\mathrm{Alb}}_X$ is corepresentable.*

Proof. Let k' be a separable closure of k. Then k' splits X (Definition 2.1). Put $X' \coloneqq X_{k'}$. We first consider the problem for X'. Pick an element $x \in X(\pi_0(X'))$, which is possible as X' is smooth over k'. By Serre's construction [Ser59] of the Albanese variety (see [Wit08, Appendix A] for a version over separably closed field), we have a morphism $g_x\colon X' \to \mathrm{Alb}_{X'}$, universal among all morphisms $g\colon X' \to A$ to an abelian variety A over k' such that $g(x) = 0_A$. Now it is easy to see that the composite morphism

$$\nabla_{k'} X' \xrightarrow{g_x \times g_x} \mathrm{Alb}_{X'} \times_{k'} \mathrm{Alb}_{X'} \xrightarrow{-} \mathrm{Alb}_{X'}$$

does not depend on the choice of x, and corepresents the functor $\underline{\mathrm{Alb}}_{X'}$. Here, $\nabla_{k'} X'$ is defined similarly as in Definition 2.1, but with the base field k'. As $(\nabla X)_{k'} \simeq \nabla_{k'} X'$, the statement for X then follows by Galois descent. □

Definition 2.3. Let X be a proper smooth scheme in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/k}$. The abelian variety that corepresents the functor $\underline{\mathrm{Alb}}_X$ is called the *Albanese variety* of X, denoted by Alb_X. The canonical morphism, denoted by

$$\alpha_X\colon \nabla X \to \mathrm{Alb}_X,$$

is called the *Albanese morphism*. For a morphism $u\colon Y \to X$ of proper smooth schemes over k, we have the induced morphism $\mathrm{Alb}_u\colon \mathrm{Alb}_Y \to \mathrm{Alb}_X$ by the universal property, which satisfies $\mathrm{Alb}_u \circ \alpha_X = \alpha_Y \circ \nabla u$.

Lemma 2.4. *Suppose that k has characteristic zero. Then*

(1) for every homomorphism $\tau\colon k \to \mathbb{C}$, we have a canonical isomorphism $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau}(\mathrm{Alb}_X, \mathbb{Q}) \simeq \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau}(X, \mathbb{Q})$;

(2) for every prime ℓ, we have a canonical isomorphism $\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}((\mathrm{Alb}_X)_{k^{\mathrm{ac}}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell) \simeq \mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(X_{k^{\mathrm{ac}}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell)$ of $\mathrm{Gal}(k^{\mathrm{ac}}/k)$-modules.

Proof. For (1), we pick an element $x \in X(\pi_0(X \otimes_{k,\tau} \mathbb{C}))$, which induces a morphism

$$(\alpha_X)_x\colon X \otimes_{k,\tau} \mathbb{C} \to \mathrm{Alb}_X \otimes_{k,\tau} \mathbb{C}$$

from Definition 2.3 and Definition 2.1. By the property of complex Albanese varieties, the induced map

$$(\alpha_X)_x^*\colon \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau}(\mathrm{Alb}, \mathbb{Q}) \to \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau}(X, \mathbb{Q})$$

is an isomorphism; it is independent of the choice of x since translation acts trivially on $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau}(\mathrm{Alb},\mathbb{Q})$.

For (2), we extend the morphism α_X to $\alpha'_X\colon X\times X\to \mathrm{Alb}_X$ by letting $X\times X\setminus \nabla X$ map to 0_{Alb_X}. By the Künneth formula, we have the map

$$(\alpha'_X)^*\colon \mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}((\mathrm{Alb}_X)_{k^{\mathrm{ac}}},\mathbb{Q}_\ell)\to \mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(X_{k^{\mathrm{ac}}},\mathbb{Q}_\ell)\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_\ell}\mathrm{H}^0_{\text{ét}}(X_{k^{\mathrm{ac}}},\mathbb{Q}_\ell)$$

of $\mathrm{Gal}(k^{\mathrm{ac}}/k)$-modules. Taking cup product, we obtain a map

$$\alpha''_X\colon \mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}((\mathrm{Alb}_X)_{k^{\mathrm{ac}}},\mathbb{Q}_\ell)\to \mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(X_{k^{\mathrm{ac}}},\mathbb{Q}_\ell)$$

of $\mathrm{Gal}(k^{\mathrm{ac}}/k)$-modules. It suffices to show that this is an isomorphism. Since k has characteristic 0, by the Lefschetz principle and the comparison theorem for singular and étale cohomology, $\alpha''_X\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_\ell}\mathbb{C}$ via any embedding $\mathbb{Q}_\ell\hookrightarrow\mathbb{C}$ is isomorphic to the canonical map in (1). Thus, (2) follows. ☐

Now we study polarizations of Alb_X. Let k be an arbitrary field.

Proposition 2.5. *Let X be a proper smooth scheme and A an abelian variety, both over k. For every $f\in\underline{\mathrm{Alb}}_X(A)$ and every divisor D on X, there is a unique homomorphism*

$$\theta_{f,D}\colon A^\vee\to A$$

(over k) satisfying the following property: for every field k' over k, every geometric point a of $A^\vee(k')$ corresponding to a line bundle L_a on $A':=A_{k'}$, and every element $x\in X(\pi_0(X_{k'}))$, we have

$$\theta_{f,D}(a)=\Sigma_{A'}\left(c_1(L_a).f_{x*}(D^{\dim X-1})\right),$$

where $\Sigma_{A'}\colon\mathrm{CH}_0(A')\to A(k')$ is the (classical) Albanese map for A'. Moreover, $\theta_{f,D}$ is symmetric, depends only on the rational equivalence class of D, and satisfies $\theta_{f,nD}=[n^{\dim X-1}]_A\circ\theta_{f,D}$ for $n\in\mathbb{Z}$.

This is previously known when D is a hyperplane section. See, for example, [Mur90, Section 2].

Proof. The uniqueness is clear. Now we show the existence. We may assume that k is separably closed. In fact, for every element $x\in X(\pi_0(X))$, we are going to define a homomorphism $\theta_{f,D,x}$ satisfying the requirement in the proposition. Then we will show that $\theta_{f,D,x}$ does not depend on the choice of x. Therefore, by Galois descent, we conclude for the general field k.

We start from the construction of $\theta_{f,D,x}$. Let $\mathcal{P}$ be the Poincaré line bundle on $A^\vee \times A$. Consider the following diagram of projection homomorphisms

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} & & A^\vee \times A^\vee \times A & & \\ & \swarrow^{\mathtt{p}_{12}} & \mathtt{p}_{13}\downarrow\;\downarrow\mathtt{p}_{23} & \searrow^{\mathtt{p}_3} & \\ A^\vee \times A^\vee & & A^\vee \times A & & A. \end{array} \tag{2.1}$$

For every $z \in \mathrm{CH}_1(A)$, put

$$D_z \coloneqq \mathtt{p}_{12*}(\mathtt{p}_{13}^* c_1(\mathcal{P}).\mathtt{p}_{23}^* c_1(\mathcal{P}).\mathtt{p}_3^* z),$$

which belongs to $\mathrm{CH}^1(A^\vee \times A^\vee)$. Then we put $\mathcal{L}_z \coloneqq \mathcal{O}_{A^\vee \times A^\vee}(D_z)$. We show

(1) $\mathcal{L}_z$ is symmetric, that is, $\mathcal{L}_z$ is invariant under the obvious involution of $A^\vee \times A^\vee$;
(2) the restrictions of $\mathcal{L}_z$ to $0_{A^\vee} \times A^\vee$ and $A^\vee \times 0_{A^\vee}$ are both trivial;
(3) for every point $a \in A^\vee(k)$, the restriction of $\mathcal{L}_z$ to $a \times A^\vee$ corresponds to the point $\Sigma_A(c_1(L_a).z)$ under the canonical isomorphism $A^{\vee\vee} \simeq A$.

Part (1) is straightforward from the definition. For (2), it suffices to show that the restricted line bundle $\mathcal{L}_z \mid 0_{A^\vee} \times A^\vee$ is trivial by (1). However, this is a special case of (3).

Now we show (3). We expand the previous commutative diagram (2.1) to the following one

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc} & & A^\vee \times A \simeq a \times A^\vee \times A & \xrightarrow{j} & A^\vee \times A^\vee \times A & & \\ & \swarrow^{q_1} & & \swarrow^{\mathtt{p}_{12}} & \mathtt{p}_{13}\downarrow\;\downarrow\mathtt{p}_{23} & \searrow^{\mathtt{p}_3} & \\ A^\vee \simeq a \times A^\vee & \xrightarrow{i} & A^\vee \times A^\vee & & A^\vee \times A & & A \end{array}$$

in which the parallelogram is Cartesian. By [Ful98, Proposition 1.7], we have

$$\mathcal{L}_z \mid a \times A^\vee \simeq i^* \mathcal{L}_z \simeq \mathcal{O}_{A^\vee}\left(q_{1*} j^* (\mathtt{p}_{13}^* c_1(\mathcal{P}).\mathtt{p}_{23}^* c_1(\mathcal{P}).\mathtt{p}_3^* z)\right). \tag{2.2}$$

We put $q_2 \coloneqq \mathtt{p}_3 \circ j \colon A^\vee \times A \to A$ which is simply the projection to the second factor. Since $j^* \mathtt{p}_{13}^* \mathcal{P}$ is isomorphic to $q_2^* L_a$, we have

$$(2.2) \simeq \mathcal{O}_{A^\vee}\left(q_{1*}(q_2^* c_1(L_a).c_1(\mathcal{P}).q_2^* z)\right) \simeq \mathcal{O}_{A^\vee}\left(q_{1*}(c_1(\mathcal{P}).q_2^*(c_1(L_a).z))\right).$$

It remains to show that the line bundle $\mathcal{L}'$ on $A^\vee$ corresponding to the point $\Sigma_A(c_1(L_a).z)$ is $\mathcal{O}_{A^\vee}(q_{1*}(c_1(\mathcal{P}).q_2^*(c_1(L_a).z)))$. Choose a representative $\sum_i m_i a_i$ of the 0-cycle $c_1(L_a).z$, which has degree zero since L_a is algebraically equivalent to zero. Then we have

$$\mathcal{L}' \simeq \bigotimes_i \mathcal{L}_{a_i}^{\otimes m_i},$$

where $\mathcal{L}_{a_i}$ is the line bundle on $A^\vee$ corresponding to a_i which, by the property of the Poincaré bundle, is isomorphic to $\mathcal{O}_{A^\vee}(q_{1*}(c_1(\mathcal{P}).q_2^* a_i))$. Thus, we have

$$\mathcal{L}' \simeq \bigotimes_i \mathcal{O}_{A^\vee}(q_{1*}(c_1(\mathcal{P}).q_2^* a_i))^{\otimes m_i} \simeq \mathcal{O}_{A^\vee}\left(q_{1*}(c_1(\mathcal{P}).q_2^*(c_1(L_a).z))\right),$$

hence (3) is proved.

By (1) and (2), the line bundle $\mathcal{L}_z$ induces a symmetric homomorphism $\theta_z\colon A^\vee \to A$. Now taking $z = f_{x*}D^{\dim X-1}$, we obtain a symmetric homomorphism $\theta_{f,D,x}\colon A^\vee \to A$ satisfying the requirement in the proposition. To construct $\theta_{f,D}$, it suffices to show that $\theta_{f,D,x} = \theta_{f,D,y}$ for any other choice of y. This amounts to showing that

$$\Sigma_A\left(c_1(L_a).f_{x*}(D^{\dim X-1})\right) = \Sigma_A\left(c_1(L_a).f_{y*}(D^{\dim X-1})\right). \tag{2.3}$$

Put $b \coloneqq f_x(y) \in A(k)$. Then we have $f_y = t_b \circ f_x$, where t_b is the translation morphism on A by b. Since L_a is algebraically equivalent to zero, $c_1(L_a).f_{y*}(D^{\dim X-1})$ is a degree zero divisor. Thus, we have

$$\Sigma_A\left(c_1(L_a).f_{y*}(D^{\dim X-1})\right) = \Sigma_A\left(t_{-b*}c_1(L_a).f_{x*}(D^{\dim X-1})\right).$$

Again, since L_a is algebraically equivalent to zero, we have $t_{-b*}c_1(L_a) = c_1(L_a) \in \mathrm{CH}^1(A)$. Thus, (2.3) follows.

The last assertion of the proposition is already clear. □

In the case where $(A, f) = (\mathrm{Alb}_X, \alpha_X)$, we will simply write

$$\theta_{X,D} \coloneqq \theta_{\alpha_X,D}\colon \mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee \to \mathrm{Alb}_X.$$

Remark 2.6. If $\dim X = 1$, then $\theta_{X,D}$ is the canonical polarization of Alb_X (which is simply the Jacobian of X), hence is an isomorphism and is independent of D.

We have the following result on the functoriality of $\theta_{X,D}$.

Proposition 2.7. *Let $u\colon Y \to X$ be a generically finite dominant morphism of proper smooth schemes over k. Let D be a divisor on X. Then we have*

$$[\deg u]_{\mathrm{Alb}_X} \circ \theta_{X,D} = \mathrm{Alb}_u \circ \theta_{Y,u^*D} \circ \mathrm{Alb}_u^\vee .$$

Here, $\deg u$ *is regarded as a function on $\pi_0(X)$ whose value on a connected component of X is the total degree of u over it; and if we write $X = \coprod X_i$, then* $[\deg u]_{\mathrm{Alb}_X}$ *is the endomorphism* $\prod_i [(\deg u)(X_i)]_{\mathrm{Alb}_{X_i}}$ *on* $\mathrm{Alb}_X \simeq \prod_i \mathrm{Alb}_{X_i}$.

Proof. We may assume that k is algebraically closed and that both X and Y are connected. Put $d \coloneqq \dim X = \dim Y$. Take points $a \in \mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee(k)$ and $y \in Y(k)$. Put $b \coloneqq \mathrm{Alb}_u^\vee(a) \in \mathrm{Alb}_Y^\vee(k)$ and $x \coloneqq u(y) \in X(k)$. Put $f \coloneqq \alpha_{X,x}\colon X \to \mathrm{Alb}_X$ and $g \coloneqq \alpha_{Y,y}\colon Y \to \mathrm{Alb}_Y$ for short. By the functoriality of Albanese morphisms, the following diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} Y & \xrightarrow{\;g\;} & \mathrm{Alb}_Y \\ {\scriptstyle u}\downarrow & & \downarrow{\scriptstyle \mathrm{Alb}_u} \\ X & \xrightarrow{\;f\;} & \mathrm{Alb}_X \end{array}$$

commutes. To prove the proposition, it suffices to show that

$$[\deg u]_{\mathrm{Alb}_X}(\theta_{X,D}(a)) = \mathrm{Alb}_u(\theta_{Y,u^*D}(b)). \tag{2.4}$$

By Proposition 2.5 and the projection formula [Ful98, Example 8.1.7], the left-hand side of (2.4) equals

$$\begin{aligned} &[\deg u]_{\mathrm{Alb}_X}\left(\Sigma_{\mathrm{Alb}_X}\left(c_1(L_a).f_*(D^{d-1})\right)\right) \\ &\quad = \Sigma_{\mathrm{Alb}_X}\left(\deg u \cdot f_*\left(f^*c_1(L_a).D^{d-1}\right)\right). \end{aligned} \tag{2.5}$$

Again by the projection formula, we have

$$\deg u \cdot f^*c_1(L_a).D^{d-1} = f^*c_1(L_a).u_*(u^*D^{d-1}).$$

Repeatedly applying the projection formula, we have

$$\begin{aligned} (2.5) &= \Sigma_{\mathrm{Alb}_X}\left(f_*\left(f^*c_1(L_a).u_*(u^*D^{d-1})\right)\right) \\ &= \Sigma_{\mathrm{Alb}_X}\left(f_*\left(u_*\left(u^*f^*c_1(L_a).(u^*D)^{d-1}\right)\right)\right) \end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \Sigma_{\mathrm{Alb}_X}\left(\mathrm{Alb}_{u*}\, g_*\left(g^* \,\mathrm{Alb}_u^*\, c_1(L_a).(u^*D)^{d-1}\right)\right)\\
&= \mathrm{Alb}_u\left(\Sigma_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y}\left(g_*\left(g^* c_1(L_b).(u^*D)^{d-1}\right)\right)\right)\\
&= \mathrm{Alb}_u\left(\Sigma_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y}\left(c_1(L_b).g_*(u^*D)^{d-1}\right)\right)\\
&= \mathrm{Alb}_u(\theta_{Y,u^*D}(b)).
\end{aligned}
$$

The proposition follows. □

Definition 2.8. We say that a divisor D on a proper smooth scheme X over k is *almost ample* if there exists $m \in \mathbb{Z}_{>0}$ such that $|mD|$ is base point free and that the induced morphism $\phi_{mD}\colon X \to \mathbb{P}(|mD|)$ is a generically finite morphism onto its image.

Proposition 2.9. *Suppose that k has characteristic zero. Let X be a proper smooth scheme in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/k}$ and D a divisor on X such that D is almost ample. Then the symmetric homomorphism $\theta_{X,D}\colon \mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee \to \mathrm{Alb}_X$ is a polarization.*

Proof. Since k has characteristic zero, by the Lefschetz principle, we may assume that k is embeddable into $\mathbb{C}$. To check whether $\theta_{X,D}$ is a polarization, we may assume $k = \mathbb{C}$ and that X is connected. Since D is almost ample, after replacing D by mD for some $m \in \mathbb{Z}_{>0}$, we may assume that $|D|$ is base point free and that the induced morphism $\phi_D\colon X \to \mathbb{P}(|D|)$ is a generically finite morphism onto its image.

Put $A \coloneqq \mathrm{Alb}_X$, $d \coloneqq \dim X$, and $h \coloneqq \dim A$ for short. We choose a point $x \in X(\mathbb{C})$, and put $f \coloneqq \alpha_{X,x}\colon X \to A$. We have canonical isomorphisms

$$
A^\vee(\mathbb{C}) \simeq \mathrm{H}^1(A,\mathcal{O}_A)/\mathrm{H}^1(A,\mathbb{Z}),\quad A(\mathbb{C}) \simeq \mathrm{H}^h(A,\Omega_A^{h-1})/\mathrm{H}^{2h-1}(A,\mathbb{Z})
$$

of complex manifolds. From the construction, the following diagram

$$
\begin{array}{ccc}
\mathrm{H}^1(A,\mathcal{O}_A) & \xrightarrow{\wedge f_*c_1(D)^{d-1}} & \mathrm{H}^h(A,\Omega_A^{h-1})\\
\downarrow & & \downarrow\\
\mathrm{H}^1(A,\mathcal{O}_A)/\mathrm{H}^1(A,\mathbb{Z}) & \xrightarrow{\theta_{X,D}} & \mathrm{H}^h(A,\Omega_A^{h-1})/\mathrm{H}^{2h-1}(A,\mathbb{Z})
\end{array}
$$

commutes, where the vertical arrows are quotient maps. Here, $c_1(D)$ is regarded as the Chern class in $\mathrm{H}^1(X,\Omega_X)$. Then the symmetric homomorphism $\theta_{X,D}$ is a polarization if and only if for every nonzero $\overline{\partial}$-closed smooth $(0,1)$-form ω on A, we have

$$
\int_{A(\mathbb{C})} \omega \wedge \overline{\omega} \wedge f_*c_1(D)^{d-1} > 0.
$$

By the property that D satisfies, we may find a smooth hermitian metric $\| \, \|_D$ on $\mathcal{O}_X(D)$ such that its Chern $(1,1)$-form $c_1(\| \, \|_D)$ is semi-positive on $X(\mathbb{C})$ and strictly positive on a Zariski dense open subset. Therefore,

$$\begin{aligned}\int_{A(\mathbb{C})} \omega \wedge \overline{\omega} \wedge f_* c_1(D)^{d-1} &= \int_{X(\mathbb{C})} f^*\omega \wedge \overline{f^*\omega} \wedge c_1(D)^{d-1} \\ &= \int_{X(\mathbb{C})} f^*\omega \wedge \overline{f^*\omega} \wedge c_1(\| \, \|_D)^{d-1} > 0.\end{aligned}$$

The proposition follows. □

Remark 2.10. There is a byproduct in proof of Proposition 2.9: For an almost ample divisor D on a proper smooth scheme X over a field k of characteristic zero, the degree of the top intersection $\deg D^{\dim X}$ is strictly positive on every irreducible component of X.

Remark 2.11. We are curious whether one can find an algebraic proof of Proposition 2.9, and whether the proposition holds for an arbitrary field k or a weaker condition on D. Note that if D is a hyperplane, then it is previously known that $\theta_{X,D}$ is an isogeny for an arbitrary field k.

2.2. Picard motives via almost ample divisors

Let k be a field of characteristic zero. Let X be a proper smooth scheme in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/k}$ of pure dimension $d \geqslant 1$. For every almost ample divisor D on X, we now define a correspondence $e_{X,D} \in \mathrm{CH}^d(X \times X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ such that the induced endomorphism

$$\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{dR}}(e_{X,D})\colon \bigoplus_{i=0}^{2d} \mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/k) \to \bigoplus_{i=0}^{2d} \mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/k)$$

on the de Rham cohomology of X is the projection onto $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/k)$. In particular, when X is projective, $(X, e_{X,D})$ is a Grothendieck motive, which is a Picard motive for X. The construction generalizes the one in [Mur90, Section 3]. We use such construction only in Subsection 3.3 when the Shimura variety is a non-proper surface; so the readers may choose to skip this subsection for now.

Let $\theta \coloneqq \theta_{X,D}\colon \mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee \to \mathrm{Alb}_X$ be the polarization obtained from Proposition 2.9. Let $\vartheta\colon \mathrm{Alb}_X \to \mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee$ be an isogeny such that $\theta \circ \vartheta = [n]_{\mathrm{Alb}_X}$ for some integer $n \geqslant 1$. We obtain a morphism

$$\beta \coloneqq (\vartheta \circ \alpha_X) \times \alpha_X \colon \nabla X \times \nabla X \to \mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee \times \mathrm{Alb}_X \,.$$

Let $\mathcal{P}$ be the Poincaré line bundle on the target. We put

$$E_{X,D} \coloneqq \mathrm{p}_{24*}\left(\beta^* c_1(\mathcal{P}).(D^d \times X \times D^d \times D^{d-1})\right) \in \mathrm{CH}^d(X \times X)_{\mathbb{Q}},$$

where the intersection is taken in $X \times X \times X \times X$, and

$$e_{X,D} \coloneqq \frac{1}{n(\deg D^d)^2} E_{X,D} \in \mathrm{CH}^d(X \times X)_{\mathbb{Q}},$$

where $\deg D^d$ is understood as a function on $\pi_0(X)$. We leave the readers an easy exercise to show that $e_{X,D}$ does not depend on the choice of ϑ.

Proposition 2.12. *Let X be a proper smooth scheme in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/k}$ of pure dimension $d \geqslant 1$, and D an almost ample divisor on X.*

1. *The map $\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{dR}}(e_{X,D})$ coincides with the projection to $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/k)$.*
2. *Let $u\colon Y \to X$ be a generically finite dominant morphism of proper smooth schemes over k. Then u^*D is an almost ample divisor on Y, and we have*
$$(\mathrm{id}_Y \times u)_* e_{Y,u^*D} = (u \times \mathrm{id}_X)^* e_{X,D}$$
in $\mathrm{CH}^d(Y \times X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$.

Proof. For both assertions, we may assume that k is algebraically closed and X is connected.

For (1), recall that for every $x \in X(k)$, we have the induced morphism $(\alpha_X)_x\colon X \to \mathrm{Alb}_X$ by restriction. Now take two arbitrary points $x, x^\vee \in X(k)$. We have the induced morphism

$$(\vartheta \circ (\alpha_X)_{x^\vee}) \times (\alpha_X)_x\colon X \times X \to \mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee \times \mathrm{Alb}_X .$$

Put $E \coloneqq ((\vartheta \circ (\alpha_X)_{x^\vee}) \times (\alpha_X)_x)^* c_1(\mathcal{P}).(X \times D^{d-1}) \in \mathrm{CH}^d(X \times X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$. It suffices to show that the induced map $\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{dR}}(E)$ on the de Rham cohomology of X is the projection onto $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/k)$ multiplied by n.

As $\mathrm{cl}_{\mathrm{dR}}(c_1(\mathcal{P})) \in \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee/k) \otimes_k \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathrm{Alb}_X/k)$, we have $\mathrm{cl}_{\mathrm{dR}}(E) \in \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/k) \otimes_k \mathrm{H}^{2d-1}_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/k)$, which implies that $\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{dR}}(E) \mid \mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/k) = 0$ unless $i = 1$. It remains to show that $\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{dR}}(E)$ acts on $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/k)$ via the multiplication by n. By Lemma 2.4 and the comparison theorem, it suffices to show that the correspondence

$$(\vartheta \times \mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_X})^* c_1(\mathcal{P}).(\mathrm{Alb}_X \times (\alpha_X)_{x*} D^{d-1}) \in \mathrm{CH}^h(\mathrm{Alb}_X \times \mathrm{Alb}_X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$$

induces the multiplication by n on $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathrm{Alb}_X/k)$, where h is the dimension of Alb_X. This in turn is equivalent to that the correspondence

$$(\theta\times\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_X})^*(\vartheta\times\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_X})^*c_1(\mathcal{P}).(\mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee\times(\alpha_X)_{x*}D^{d-1})\in\mathrm{CH}^h(\mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee\times\mathrm{Alb}_X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$$

induces the map $n\cdot\theta^*\colon \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathrm{Alb}_X/k)\to\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee/k)$. However, we have $\theta\circ\vartheta=[n]_{\mathrm{Alb}_X}$, which implies $\vartheta\circ\theta=[n]_{\mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee}$, hence

$$(\theta\times\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_X})^*(\vartheta\times\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_X})^*c_1(\mathcal{P})=([n]_{\mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee}\times\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_X})^*c_1(\mathcal{P})=n\cdot c_1(\mathcal{P}).$$

On the other hand, the construction of θ in Proposition 2.5 implies that the correspondence $c_1(\mathcal{P}).(\mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee\times(\alpha_X)_{x*}D^{d-1})$ exactly induces the restriction $\theta^*\colon \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathrm{Alb}_X/k)\to\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee/k)$. Thus, (1) is proved.

For (2), the assertion that u^*D is almost ample follows directly from Definition 2.8. For the rest, we may assume that $k(Y)/k(X)$ is Galois. In fact, by the resolution of singularity, we can always find another generically finite dominant morphism of connected proper smooth schemes $v\colon Z\to Y$ such that $k(Z)/k(X)$ is Galois. Now if (2) holds for v and $u\circ v$, then it holds for u. Thus, we may assume that $k(Y)/k(X)$ is Galois with the Galois group Γ.

Choose two arbitrary points $y,y^\vee\in Y(k)$, and put $x\coloneqq u(y)$ and $x^\vee\coloneqq u(y^\vee)$. Put

$$\beta_X\coloneqq(\alpha_X)_{x^\vee}\times(\alpha_X)_x\colon X\times X\to\mathrm{Alb}_X\times\mathrm{Alb}_X,$$

and similarly for β_Y. We choose a homomorphism $\vartheta_X\colon \mathrm{Alb}_X\to\mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee$ (resp. $\vartheta_Y\colon \mathrm{Alb}_Y\to\mathrm{Alb}_Y^\vee$) such that $\theta_{X,D}\circ\vartheta_X=[n_X]_{\mathrm{Alb}_X}$ (resp. $\theta_{Y,u^*D}\circ\vartheta_Y=[n_Y]_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y}$). Put

$$E_X\coloneqq\beta_X^*(\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_X}\times\vartheta_X)^*c_1(\mathcal{P}_X).(X\times D^{d-1}),$$
$$E_Y\coloneqq\beta_Y^*(\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y}\times\vartheta_Y)^*c_1(\mathcal{P}_Y).(Y\times u^*D^{d-1}),$$

where $\mathcal{P}_X$ (resp. $\mathcal{P}_Y$) is the Poincaré line bundle on $\mathrm{Alb}_X\times\mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee$ (resp. $\mathrm{Alb}_Y\times\mathrm{Alb}_Y^\vee$). Then the formula in (2) follows from the symmetry of Poincaré bundles, and the identity

$$(\mathrm{id}_Y\times u)_*E_Y=\frac{n_Y}{n_X}\cdot(u\times\mathrm{id}_X)^*E_X$$

in $\mathrm{CH}^d(Y\times X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$. By the projection formula, this in turn follows from

$$(\mathrm{id}_Y\times u)_*\beta_Y^*(\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y}\times\vartheta_Y)^*c_1(\mathcal{P}_Y)\tag{2.6}$$

$$= \frac{n_Y}{n_X} \cdot (u \times \mathrm{id}_X)^* \beta_X^* (\vartheta_X \times \mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_X})^* c_1(\mathcal{P}_X).$$

Consider the following diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccccc}
Y \times Y & \xrightarrow{\beta_Y} & \mathrm{Alb}_Y \times \mathrm{Alb}_Y & \overset{\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \times \vartheta_Y}{\dashrightarrow} & \mathrm{Alb}_Y \times \mathrm{Alb}_Y^\vee \\
\Big\downarrow{\scriptstyle \mathrm{id}_Y \times u} & & \Big\downarrow{\scriptstyle \mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \times \mathrm{Alb}_u} & & \Big\uparrow{\scriptstyle \mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \times \mathrm{Alb}_u^\vee} \\
Y \times X & \xrightarrow{\beta} & \mathrm{Alb}_Y \times \mathrm{Alb}_X & \xrightarrow{\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \times \vartheta_X} & \mathrm{Alb}_Y \times \mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee \\
\Big\downarrow{\scriptstyle u \times \mathrm{id}_X} & & \Big\downarrow{\scriptstyle \mathrm{Alb}_u \times \mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_X}} & & \Big\downarrow{\scriptstyle \mathrm{Alb}_u \times \mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee}} \\
X \times X & \xrightarrow{\beta_X} & \mathrm{Alb}_X \times \mathrm{Alb}_X & \xrightarrow{\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_X} \times \vartheta_X} & \mathrm{Alb}_X \times \mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee
\end{array}$$

where $\beta \coloneqq (\alpha_Y)_y \times (\alpha_X)_{x^\vee}$. Note that squares involving the dash arrow do not necessarily commute. By the isomorphism $(\mathrm{Alb}_u \times \mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee})^* \mathcal{P}_X \simeq (\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \times \mathrm{Alb}_u^\vee)^* \mathcal{P}_Y$, (2.6) is equivalent to

$$\begin{aligned}
(2.7) \qquad & (\mathrm{id}_Y \times u)_* \beta_Y^* (\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \times \vartheta_Y)^* c_1(\mathcal{P}_Y) \\
&= \frac{n_Y}{n_X} \cdot \beta^* (\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \times \vartheta_X)^* (\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \times \mathrm{Alb}_u^\vee)^* c_1(\mathcal{P}_Y).
\end{aligned}$$

By the projection formula, (2.7) is equivalent to that

$$\deg u \cdot n_X \cdot (\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \times \vartheta_Y)^* c_1(\mathcal{P}_Y) - n_Y \cdot (\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \times (\mathrm{Alb}_u^\vee \circ \vartheta_X \circ \mathrm{Alb}_u))^* c_1(\mathcal{P}_Y)$$

is contained in the kernel of $(\mathrm{id}_Y \times u)_* \circ \beta_Y^*$. Now the Galois group Γ acts on Alb_Y via the homomorphisms $\gamma\colon \mathrm{Alb}_Y \to \mathrm{Alb}_Y$ for $\gamma \in \Gamma$. We have a similar action on $\mathrm{Alb}_Y^\vee$ by duality, and the homomorphism ϑ_Y is Γ-equivariant since the divisor u^*D is Γ-invariant. For a line bundle $\mathcal{L}$ on $\mathrm{Alb}_Y \times \mathrm{Alb}_Y$, we have the trace line bundle

$$\mathcal{L}_\Gamma \coloneqq \bigotimes_{\gamma \in \Gamma} (\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \times \gamma)^* \mathcal{L}.$$

Moreover, if $\mathcal{L}_\Gamma$ is torsion, then $c_1(\mathcal{L})$ is in the kernel of $(\mathrm{id}_Y \times u)_* \circ \beta_Y^*$. We define similarly $\mathcal{L}_\Gamma$ for line bundles $\mathcal{L}$ on $\mathrm{Alb}_Y \times \mathrm{Alb}_Y^\vee$.

In all, (2.7) will follow from the following claim: For $\mathcal{P} \coloneqq \mathcal{P}_Y$ on $\mathrm{Alb}_Y \times \mathrm{Alb}_Y^\vee$, the line bundle

$$(\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \times \vartheta_Y)^* \mathcal{P}_\Gamma^{\otimes n_X} \otimes (\mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \times (\mathrm{Alb}_u^\vee \circ \vartheta_X \circ \mathrm{Alb}_u))^* \mathcal{P}^{\otimes - n_Y}$$

is torsion. An easy diagram chasing implies that the claim will follow if we can show that the two homomorphisms

$$\mathrm{Alb}_u^\vee \circ \vartheta_X \circ \mathrm{Alb}_u \circ [n_Y]_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y}, \qquad \sum_{\gamma\in\Gamma} \gamma^\vee \circ \vartheta_Y \circ [n_X]_{\mathrm{Alb}_Y} \tag{2.8}$$

from Alb_Y to $\mathrm{Alb}_Y^\vee$ coincide. However, this can be checked on the level of k-points as the base field algebraically closed of characteristic zero. Then we have a homomorphism $u_*\colon \mathrm{Alb}_Y^\vee(k) \to \mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee(k)$ induced by pushforward of divisors along $u\colon Y \to X$ as we have $\mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee \simeq \mathrm{Pic}_X^0$ and $\mathrm{Alb}_Y^\vee \simeq \mathrm{Pic}_Y^0$. By the definition of pushforward, the diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} & & \mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee(k) & & \\ & \nearrow^{u_*} & & \searrow^{\mathrm{Alb}_u^\vee} & \\ \mathrm{Alb}_Y^\vee(k) & & \xrightarrow{\sum_{\gamma\in\Gamma}\gamma^\vee} & & \mathrm{Alb}_Y^\vee(k) \end{array}$$

commutes; and by the projection formula, the diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathrm{Alb}_Y^\vee(k) & \xrightarrow{\theta_{Y,u^*D}} & \mathrm{Alb}_Y(k) \\ \downarrow{\scriptstyle u_*} & & \downarrow{\scriptstyle \mathrm{Alb}_u} \\ \mathrm{Alb}_X^\vee(k) & \xrightarrow{\theta_{X,D}} & \mathrm{Alb}_X(k) \end{array}$$

commutes as well. The two diagrams imply the coincidence of the two homomorphisms in (2.8). Thus, the claim hence (2) follow. □

3. Algebraic cycles and height pairings

In this section, we make some preparation for algebraic cycles and height pairings for general varieties. In Subsection 3.1, we review the notion of algebraic cycles and correspondences. In Subsection 3.2, we review the construction of the Beilinson–Bloch height pairing and introduce our variant – the Beilinson–Bloch–Poincaré height pairing. In Subsection 3.3, we discuss the construction of some Künneth–Chow projectors for curves and surfaces, which will be used in the modified diagonal $\Delta_z^3 X_K$ later.

Let k be a field of characteristic zero. We work in the category $\mathrm{Sch}_{/k}$.

3.1. Cycles and correspondences

Consider a proper smooth scheme $X \in \mathrm{Sch}_{/k}$ of pure dimension d. Let $\mathrm{Z}^i(X)$ (resp. $\mathrm{CH}^i(X)$) be the abelian group of algebraic cycles (resp. Chow cycles) on X of codimension i, with a natural surjective map $\mathrm{Z}^i(X) \to \mathrm{CH}^i(X)$. For example, we have the diagonal cycle

$$\Delta^r X \in \mathrm{Z}^{(r-1)d}(X^r)$$

for $r \geqslant 1$ as the image of the diagonal morphism $\Delta^r \colon X \to X^r$. We write ΔX for $\Delta^2 X$ for simplicity.

We have the de Rham cycle class map

$$\mathrm{cl}_{\mathrm{dR}} \colon \mathrm{CH}^i(X)_{\mathbb{Q}} \to \mathrm{H}^{2i}_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/k),$$

whose kernel we denote by $\mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_{\mathbb{Q}}$. By various comparison theorems, $\mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_{\mathbb{Q}}$ coincides with the kernel of the Betti cycle class map

$$\mathrm{cl}_{\mathrm{B},\tau} \colon \mathrm{CH}^i(X)_{\mathbb{Q}} \to \mathrm{H}^{2i}_{\mathrm{B},\tau}(X, \mathbb{Q})$$

for every embedding $\tau \colon k \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$, and the ℓ-adic cycle class map

$$\mathrm{cl}_{\ell} \colon \mathrm{CH}^i(X)_{\mathbb{Q}} \to \mathrm{H}^{2i}_{\text{ét}}(X_{k^{\mathrm{ac}}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell(i))$$

for every rational prime ℓ. Moreover, by the Hochschild–Serre spectral sequence, we obtain the ℓ-adic Abel–Jacobi map

$$\mathrm{AJ}_\ell \colon \mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_{\mathbb{Q}} \to \mathrm{H}^1(k, \mathrm{H}^{2i-1}_{\text{ét}}(X_{k^{\mathrm{ac}}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell(i))).$$

Definition 3.1. We put $\mathrm{CH}^i(X)^1_{\mathbb{Q}} \coloneqq \bigcap_\ell \ker \mathrm{AJ}_\ell$ as a subspace of $\mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_{\mathbb{Q}}$, where the intersection is taken over all rational primes ℓ, and

$$\mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_R \coloneqq \mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_{\mathbb{Q}} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} R, \quad \mathrm{CH}^i(X)^\natural_R \coloneqq (\mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_{\mathbb{Q}} / \mathrm{CH}^i(X)^1_{\mathbb{Q}}) \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} R$$

for every ring R containing $\mathbb{Q}$. We call elements in $\mathrm{CH}^i(X)^\natural_R$ *natural cycles* (of codimension i).

Remark 3.2. In [Beĭ87], Beilinson conjectures that $\ker \mathrm{AJ}_\ell = \{0\}$ for every rational prime ℓ if k is a number field and X is projective, which implies $\mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_R = \mathrm{CH}^i(X)^\natural_R$.

We introduce the following definition, which will be used in Section 5.

Definition 3.3. We say that a formal series $\sum_j c_j Z_j$ with $c_j \in \mathbb{C}$ and $Z_j \in \mathrm{Z}^i(X)$ is *Chow convergent* if the image of $\{Z_j\}_j$ in $\mathrm{CH}^i(X)_\mathbb{C}$ generates a finite dimensional subspace, and the induced formal series in this finite dimensional space is absolutely convergent. We denote by $\mathrm{CZ}^i(X)$ the set of Chow convergent formal series in $\mathrm{Z}^i(X)$, which is a complex vector space and admits a natural complex linear map $\mathrm{CZ}^i(X) \to \mathrm{CH}^i(X)_\mathbb{C}$.

Now we recall the notation of correspondences. A *(Chow self-)correspondence of* X is an element $z \in \mathrm{CH}^d(X \times X)$. It induces a graded map

$$z^*\colon \bigoplus_{i=0}^{d} \mathrm{CH}^i(X) \to \bigoplus_{i=0}^{d} \mathrm{CH}^i(X)$$

sending α to $\mathtt{p}_{1*}(z.\mathtt{p}_2^*\alpha)$, where $\mathtt{p}_i\colon X \times X \to X$ is the projection to the i-th factor, a convention recalled from Subsection 1.7. On the level of various cohomology, it induces graded maps

$$\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{dR}}(z)\colon \bigoplus_{i=0}^{2d} \mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/k) \to \bigoplus_{i=0}^{2d} \mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/k),$$
$$\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{B},\tau}(z)\colon \bigoplus_{i=0}^{2d} \mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{B},\tau}(X,\mathbb{Q}) \to \bigoplus_{i=0}^{2d} \mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{B},\tau}(X,\mathbb{Q}),$$

and

$$\mathrm{cl}^*_\ell(z)\colon \bigoplus_{i=0}^{2d} \mathrm{H}^i_{\acute{\mathrm{e}}\mathrm{t}}(X_{k^{\mathrm{ac}}},\mathbb{Q}_\ell(j)) \to \bigoplus_{i=0}^{2d} \mathrm{H}^i_{\acute{\mathrm{e}}\mathrm{t}}(X_{k^{\mathrm{ac}}},\mathbb{Q}_\ell(j))$$

for every rational prime ℓ and $j \in \mathbb{Z}$. They are compatible with each other under various comparison theorems and cycle class maps. When we regard the diagonal $\Delta X \subseteq X \times X$ as a correspondence, we usually write it as id_X.

3.2. Beilinson–Bloch–Poincaré height pairing

We review the theory of height pairing between cycles of Beilinson and Bloch. Now suppose that k is a number field. Consider a projective smooth scheme $X \in \mathrm{Sch}_{/k}$ of pure dimension d. Beilinson [Beĭ87] and Bloch [Blo84] have defined, via two approaches, a bilinear pairing

$$\langle\ ,\ \rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_X\colon \mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_\mathbb{Q} \times \mathrm{CH}^{d+1-i}(X)^0_\mathbb{Q} \to \mathbb{C}.$$

However, both approaches relies on some hypotheses that are still unknown even today.

We review briefly Beilinson's construction: For $z_1 \in \mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_{\mathbb{Q}}$ and $z_2 \in \mathrm{CH}^{d+1-i}(X)^0_{\mathbb{Q}}$, we choose their representatives $Z_1 \in \mathrm{Z}^i(X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ and $Z_2 \in \mathrm{Z}^{d+1-i}(X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ that have disjoint support. For every place v of k, there is a local index $\langle Z_1, Z_2\rangle_{X_v}$ on $X_v := X_{k_v}$. For v archimedean, this is defined in [Beĭ87, Section 3] via the potential theory on Kähler manifolds; it is unconditional. For v nonarchimedean such that X_v has good reduction, this is defined via intersection theory on an arbitrary smooth model of X_v over O_{k_v}. For v nonarchimedean in general, the definition of $\langle Z_1, Z_2\rangle_{X_v}$ is conditional: Choose a rational prime ℓ not underlying v and an isomorphism $\iota_\ell\colon \mathbb{C} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$ such that $\mathrm{H}^{2i}_{\text{ét}}(X_{k_v^{\mathrm{ac}}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell)$ satisfies the weight-monodromy conjecture, which implies that the cycle class of Z_1 in the absolute étale cohomology $\mathrm{H}^{2i}_{\text{ét}}(X_v, \mathbb{Q}_\ell(i))$ vanishes (same for Z_2). Then one can define $\langle Z_1, Z_2\rangle_{X_v}$ as a "link pairing" valued in $\mathbb{Q}_\ell$ followed by the map ι_ℓ^{-1}. See [Beĭ87, Section 2.1] for more details. We then define

$$\langle Z_1, Z_2\rangle_X^{\mathrm{BB}} := \sum_v r(v) \cdot \langle Z_1, Z_2\rangle_{X_v}, \tag{3.1}$$

where the sum is taken over all places v of k, and $r(v)$ equals 1, 2, and $\log q_v$ when v is real, complex, and nonarchimedean (with q_v the residue cardinality of k_v), respectively.

For every intermediate ring $\mathbb{Q} \subseteq R \subseteq \mathbb{C}$, we obtain a pairing

$$\langle\ ,\ \rangle_X^{\mathrm{BB}}\colon\ \mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_R \times \mathrm{CH}^{d+1-i}(X)^0_R \to \mathbb{C}$$

via R-bilinear extension. Beilinson conjectures that the pairing $\langle\ ,\ \rangle_X^{\mathrm{BB}}$ is independent of ℓ and the isomorphism ι_ℓ.

Remark 3.4. As we have mentioned, if X_v satisfies the weight-monodromy conjecture for every nonarchimedean place v of k (for example, when X is a product of curves, surfaces, or abelian varieties), then the Beilinson–Bloch height pairing $\langle\ ,\ \rangle_X^{\mathrm{BB}}$ is unconditionally defined (but may *a priori* depend on the choices of ℓ and ι_ℓ). When X is a curve, the Beilinson–Bloch height pairing coincides with the Néron–Tate height pairing up to -1. When X is an abelian variety, the Beilinson–Bloch height pairing coincides with the pairing defined in [Kün01]. In particular, in these two cases, the independence of ℓ and ι_ℓ is known.

Lemma 3.5. *Suppose that the Beilinson–Bloch height pairing is defined for X. Take $Z \in \mathrm{CH}^1(X)^0_R$ for some intermediate ring $\mathbb{Q} \subseteq R \subseteq \mathbb{C}$. Then we have*

$$\langle Z_1, Z.Z_2 \rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_X = 0$$

for every $Z_1 \in \mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_R$ and $Z_2 \in \mathrm{CH}^{d-i}(X)^0_R$.

Proof. We fix an embedding $k \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$. Since Z is homologically trivial, it is algebraically equivalent to zero; so is $Z.Z_2$. By [Beĭ87, Lemma 4.0.7], it suffices to show that the image of $Z.Z_2$ under the complex Abel–Jacobi map $\mathrm{CH}^{d-i+1}(X)^0_R \to \mathrm{J}^{d-i+1}(X_{\mathbb{C}})_R$ is zero, where $\mathrm{J}^{d-i+1}(X_{\mathbb{C}})$ is the $(d-i+1)$-th intermediate Jacobian of $X_{\mathbb{C}}$ (as an abelian group). We replace Z and Z_2 by their representatives in $\mathrm{Z}^1(X)_R$ and $\mathrm{Z}^{d-i}(X)_R$ with proper intersection. Since Z_2 is homologically trivial, we may choose a (singular) chain C_{Z_2} of (real) dimension $2i+1$ with boundary Z_2. Then $Z.C_{Z_2}$ is a chain of dimension $2i-1$ with boundary $Z.Z_2$. It suffices to show that

$$\int_{Z.C_{Z_2}} \omega = 0$$

for every closed differential form ω whose class belongs to the Hodge filtration $\mathrm{Fil}^i \mathrm{H}^{2i-1}_{\mathrm{B}}(X, \mathbb{C})$. Since (the underlying cycle of) Z is homologous to zero, we can take a $(1,0)$-form η such that $\mathrm{d}\eta$ is the class represented by Z by the $\partial\overline{\partial}$-lemma from Hodge theory. Thus,

$$\int_{Z.C_{Z_2}} \omega = \int_{C_{Z_2}} \mathrm{d}\eta \wedge \omega = \int_{C_{Z_2}} \mathrm{d}(\eta \wedge \omega) = \int_{Z_2} \eta \wedge \omega = 0,$$

in which the last equality follows as we may take a representative of ω as a sum of $(p, 2i-1-p)$-forms with $p \geqslant i$. The lemma follows. □

Recall that if A is an abelian variety over k of dimension $h \geqslant 1$, and $\mathbb{Q} \subseteq R \subseteq \mathbb{C}$ is an immediate ring, then we also have the Néron–Tate (bilinear) height pairing

$$\langle \,,\, \rangle^{\mathrm{NT}}_A \colon A(k)_R \times A^\vee(k)_R \to \mathbb{C}.$$

Composing with the Albanese maps $\mathrm{CH}^h(A)^0_R \to A(k)_R$ and $\mathrm{CH}^h(A^\vee)^0_R \to A^\vee(k)_R$, we may regard the above pairing as a map

$$\langle \,,\, \rangle^{\mathrm{NT}}_A \colon \mathrm{CH}^h(A)^0_R \times \mathrm{CH}^h(A^\vee)^0_R \to \mathbb{C}. \tag{3.2}$$

Remark 3.6. The Néron–Tate height pairing (3.2) is related to the Beilinson–Bloch height pairing via the following commutative diagram:

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} \mathrm{CH}^h(A)^0_R & \times & \mathrm{CH}^1(A)^0_R & \xrightarrow{\langle\,,\,\rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_A} & \mathbb{C} \\ \| & & \downarrow & & \| \\ \mathrm{CH}^h(A)^0_R & \times & \mathrm{CH}^h(A^\vee)^0_R & \xrightarrow{-\langle\,,\,\rangle^{\mathrm{NT}}_A} & \mathbb{C} \end{array}$$

in which $\mathrm{CH}^1(A)^0_R \to \mathrm{CH}^h(A^\vee)^0_R$ is the tautological map.

Now we will combine the Beilinson–Bloch height pairing on X and the Néron–Tate height pairing on A to give a height pairing

$$\langle\,,\,\rangle^{\mathrm{BBP}}_{X,A}\colon\ \mathrm{CH}^{h+i}(X\times A)^0_R \times \mathrm{CH}^{h+d-i}(X\times A^\vee)^0_R \to \mathbb{C}$$

using the Poincaré bundle, for every intermediate ring $\mathbb{Q}\subseteq R\subseteq\mathbb{C}$. The process is easy: Let $\mathcal{P}$ be the Poincaré line bundle on $A\times A^\vee$. We have projection morphisms

$$\mathtt{p}_{12}\colon X\times A\times A^\vee \to X\times A,\quad \mathtt{p}_{13}\colon X\times A\times A^\vee \to X\times A^\vee,$$

and recall the Fourier–Mukai transform

$$\wp\colon\ \mathrm{CH}^{h+d-i}(X\times A^\vee)^0_R \to \mathrm{CH}^{d+1-i}(X\times A)^0_R$$

sending z to $\mathtt{p}_{12*}((X\times c_1(\mathcal{P})).\mathtt{p}_{13}^*z)$. We then define

$$\langle z_1, z_2\rangle^{\mathrm{BBP}}_{X,A} \coloneqq \langle z_1, \wp(z_2)\rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{X\times A}.$$

Definition 3.7. We call $\langle\,,\,\rangle^{\mathrm{BBP}}_{X,A}$ the *Beilinson–Bloch–Poincaré height pairing* for (X,A).

Remark 3.8. The Beilinson–Bloch–Poincaré height pairing is unconditionally defined if X_v satisfies the weight-monodromy conjecture for every nonarchimedean place v of k (but may *a priori* depend on the choices of ℓ and ι_ℓ). When $X=\operatorname{Spec} k$ (resp. $h=1$, that is, A is an elliptic curve, hence is canonically isomorphic to $A^\vee$), the Beilinson–Bloch–Poincaré height pairing for (X,A) reduces to the Néron–Tate height pairing (3.2) for A up to -1 (resp. the Beilinson–Bloch height pairing for $X\times A$).

Remark 3.9. The Beilinson–Bloch–Poincaré height pairing can be defined more generally for an abelian scheme $\underline{A}$ of relative dimension $h \geqslant 1$ over X as a pairing

$$\langle\ ,\ \rangle_{\underline{A}}^{\mathrm{BBP}}\colon \mathrm{CH}^{h+i}(\underline{A})_R^0 \times \mathrm{CH}^{h+d-i}(\underline{A}^\vee)_R^0 \to \mathbb{C}$$

such that $\langle z_1, z_2\rangle_{\underline{A}}^{\mathrm{BBP}} = \langle z_1, \mathtt{p}_{1*}(c_1(\underline{\mathcal{P}}).\mathtt{p}_2^* z_2)\rangle_{\underline{A}}^{\mathrm{BB}}$, where $\mathtt{p}_1\colon \underline{A}\times_X \underline{A}^\vee \to \underline{A}$ and $\mathtt{p}_2\colon \underline{A}\times_X\underline{A}^\vee \to \underline{A}^\vee$ are projection morphisms, and $\underline{\mathcal{P}}$ is the relative Poincaré bundle on $\underline{A}\times_X\underline{A}^\vee$.

3.3. Künneth–Chow projectors

In this subsection, we will construct some Künneth–Chow projectors, which will be used in Subsection 4.4. The readers may skip it at this moment.

Consider a proper smooth scheme $X \in \mathrm{Sch}_{/k}$ of pure dimension d. Put

$$\mathrm{H}_{\mathrm{dR}}^{\mathrm{even}}(X/k) \coloneqq \bigoplus_{i \text{ even}} \mathrm{H}_{\mathrm{dR}}^{i}(X/k), \quad \mathrm{H}_{\mathrm{dR}}^{\mathrm{odd}}(X/k) \coloneqq \bigoplus_{i \text{ odd}} \mathrm{H}_{\mathrm{dR}}^{i}(X/k).$$

Definition 3.10. We say that a correspondence $z \in \mathrm{CH}^d(X\times X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ is an *even* (resp. *odd*) *projector* if the map $\mathrm{cl}_{\mathrm{dR}}^*(z)$ is the projection map to $\mathrm{H}_{\mathrm{dR}}^{\mathrm{even}}(X/k)$ (resp. $\mathrm{H}_{\mathrm{dR}}^{\mathrm{odd}}(X/k)$).

We introduce the following convention: for a zero cycle D on X, we regard its degree $\deg D$ as a function on $\pi_0(X)$.

Lemma 3.11. *We have*

(1) *Suppose that $d = 1$. Let $D \in \mathrm{CH}^1(X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ be a cycle such that $\deg D$ is nonzero on every connected component of X. Then*

$$z_{X,D} \coloneqq \Delta X - \frac{1}{\deg D}(X\times D + D\times X)$$

is an odd projector for X.

(2) *Suppose that $d = 2$. Let $D \in \mathrm{CH}^1(X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ be a cycle that is an almost ample divisor (Definition 2.8). Then*

$$z_{X,D} \coloneqq e_{X,D} + e_{X,D}^{\mathrm{t}}$$

is an odd projector for X, where $e_{X,D}$ is the correspondence in Proposition 2.12 and $e_{X,D}^{\mathrm{t}}$ is its transpose.

Proof. Part (1) is obvious. Part (2) follows from Proposition 2.12(1). □

Lemma 3.12. *Let z be an odd projector for X. Then*

(1) the image of the induced map $z^*\colon \mathrm{CH}^i(X)_{\mathbb{Q}} \to \mathrm{CH}^i(X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ is contained in $\mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_{\mathbb{Q}}$;
(2) the cycle

$$z \times z \times z + z \times (\Delta X - z) \times (\Delta X - z) + (\Delta X - z) \times z \times (\Delta X - z) + (\Delta X - z) \times (\Delta X - z) \times z$$

is an odd projector for $X \times X \times X$.

Proof. For (1), since $\mathrm{cl}_{\mathrm{dR}}(\mathrm{Im}\, z^*) \subseteq \mathrm{Im}(\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{dR}}(z)) = \mathrm{H}^{\mathrm{odd}}_{\mathrm{dR}}(X/k)$, we know that the image of z^* is contained in $\mathrm{CH}^i(X)^0_{\mathbb{Q}}$.

For (2), note that if z is an odd projector, then $\Delta X - z$ is an even projector. Thus, (2) follows from the Künneth decomposition for the algebraic de Rham cohomology. □

Definition 3.13. Let z be an odd projector for X. We define

$$\mathrm{pr}^{[3]}_z\colon \mathrm{CH}^i(X \times X \times X)_{\mathbb{Q}} \to \mathrm{CH}^i(X \times X \times X)^0_{\mathbb{Q}}$$

to be the map induced by the odd projector for $X \times X \times X$ as in Lemma 3.12(2).

4. Fourier–Jacobi cycles and derivative of *L*-functions

In this section, we construct Fourier–Jacobi cycles and state our main conjectures. In Subsection 4.1, we construct the category of CM data for a conjugate symplectic automorphic character μ of weight one. In Subsection 4.2, we introduce our Shimura varieties and study their Albanese varieties. In Subsection 4.3, we construct Fourier–Jacobi cycles and show that they are homologically trivial. In Subsection 4.4, we propose various versions of the arithmetic Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$.

Let F be a totally real number field of degree $d \geqslant 1$, and E/F a totally imaginary quadratic extension. We denote by

- $\mathtt{c}$ the nontrivial Galois involution of E over F,
- E^- the subgroup of E consisting of e satisfying $e + e^{\mathtt{c}} = 0$, and E^1 the subgroup of $E^\times$ consisting of e satisfying $ee^{\mathtt{c}} = 1$,
- by $\mu_{E/F}\colon F^\times\backslash \mathbf{A}^\times_F \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ the quadratic character associated to E/F via the global class field theory,

- E_v the base change $E \otimes_F F_v$ for every place v of F,
- Φ_F the set of real embeddings of F, Φ_E the set of complex embeddings of E, and $\pi\colon \Phi_E \to \Phi_F$ the projection map given by restriction.

Recall that a CM type (of E) is a subset Φ of Φ_E such that π induces a bijection from Φ to Φ_F.

In this section, we work in the category $\mathrm{Sch}_{/E}$.

4.1. Motives for CM characters

In this subsection, we generalize some constructions in [Den89, Section 2].

Definition 4.1. We say that an automorphic character $\mu\colon E^\times\backslash \mathbf{A}_E^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ is *conjugate self-dual* if μ is trivial on $\mathrm{N}_{\mathbf{A}_E/\mathbf{A}_F}\,\mathbf{A}_E^\times$. We say that μ is *conjugate orthogonal* (resp. *conjugate symplectic*) if $\mu \mid \mathbf{A}_F^\times = 1$ (resp. $\mu \mid \mathbf{A}_F^\times = \mu_{E/F}$).

Remark 4.2. A conjugate self-dual automorphic character is necessarily strictly unitary (Definition B.2). It is either conjugate orthogonal or conjugate symplectic, but not both.

For a conjugate symplectic (resp. conjugate orthogonal) automorphic character μ, there exist a CM type Φ_μ and a unique tuple $\underline{\mathtt{w}}_\mu = (\mathtt{w}_\tau)_{\tau\in\Phi_F}$ of odd (resp. even) nonnegative integers such that for every $\tau \in \Phi_F$, the component $\mu_\tau\colon (E \otimes_{F,\tau} \mathbb{R})^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ is the character

$$z \mapsto \arg(z)^{-\mathtt{w}_\tau},$$

where we have identified $(E\otimes_{F,\tau}\mathbb{R})^\times$ with $\mathbb{C}^\times$ via the unique element $\tau' \in \Phi_\mu$ above τ. If $\underline{\mathtt{w}}_\mu$ does not contain 0, then Φ_μ is also unique. In what follows, we put $\mu^{\mathtt{c}} := \mu \circ \mathtt{c}$.

Definition 4.3. Let μ be a conjugate self-dual automorphic character.

(1) We call $\underline{\mathtt{w}}_\mu$ the *weight* of μ. If $\underline{\mathtt{w}}_\mu$ is a constant m, then we say that μ is of weight m.
(2) If $\underline{\mathtt{w}}_\mu$ does not contain zero, then we call Φ_μ the *CM type* of μ. Furthermore, we denote by $M'_\mu \subseteq \mathbb{C}$ the reflex field of (E, Φ_μ), with the induced CM type Ψ_μ.

Now let μ be a conjugate symplectic automorphic character, which is not algebraic. We put

$$\mu^{\mathrm{alg}} := \mu \cdot |\ |_E^{-1/2},$$

which is then algebraic. Denote by $M_\mu \subseteq \mathbb{C}$ the subfield generated by values $\mu^{\mathrm{alg}}(x)$ for $x \in (\mathbf{A}_E^\infty)^\times$, which is a number field containing M'_μ.

Remark 4.4. It is clear that $\mu^{\mathtt{c}}$ is conjugate symplectic of the same weight as μ. Moreover, we have $M_{\mu^{\mathtt{c}}} = M_\mu$, $M'_{\mu^{\mathtt{c}}} = M'_\mu$, and that $\Psi_{\mu^{\mathtt{c}}}$ is the opposite CM type of Ψ_μ.

Definition 4.5. Let μ be a conjugate symplectic automorphic character of weight one.

(1) We denote by $\eta'_\mu \colon \mathrm{Res}_{M'_\mu/\mathbb{Q}}\,\mathbb{G}_\mathrm{m} \to \mathrm{Res}_{E/\mathbb{Q}}\,\mathbb{G}_\mathrm{m}$ the reciprocity map, and put

$$\eta_\mu \coloneqq \eta'_\mu \circ \mathrm{N}_{M_\mu/M'_\mu} \colon \mathrm{Res}_{M_\mu/\mathbb{Q}}\,\mathbb{G}_\mathrm{m} \to \mathrm{Res}_{E/\mathbb{Q}}\,\mathbb{G}_\mathrm{m}.$$

(2) We define a *CM data for* μ to be a quadruple $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu)$, in which

- A_μ is an abelian variety over E,
- $i_\mu \colon M_\mu \to \mathrm{End}_E(A_\mu)_\mathbb{Q}$ is a CM structure such that
  - for every $x \in M_\mu$, the determinant of the action of $i_\mu(x)$ on the E-vector space $\mathrm{Lie}_E(A_\mu)$ equals $\eta_\mu(x)$,
  - the associated CM character of A_μ with respect to the inclusion $M_\mu \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$ coincides with μ^{alg},
- $\lambda_\mu \colon A_\mu \to A_\mu^\vee$ is a polarization satisfying $\lambda \circ i_\mu(x) = i_\mu(\overline{x})^\vee \circ \lambda$ for every $x \in M_\mu$,
- $r_\mu \colon M_\mu \otimes_\mathbb{Q} E \to \mathrm{H}^{\mathrm{dR}}_1(A_\mu/E)$ is an isomorphism of $M_\mu \otimes_\mathbb{Q} E$-modules satisfying that there exist an element $\beta \in M_\mu$ and an isomorphism $c\colon \mathrm{H}^{\mathrm{dR}}_{2\dim A_\mu}(A_\mu/E) \to E$ of E-modules, such that for every $x, y \in M_\mu \otimes_\mathbb{Q} E$, we have $c(\langle r_\mu(x), r_\mu(y)\rangle_\lambda) = \mathrm{Tr}_{M_\mu\otimes_\mathbb{Q} E/E}(x\beta\overline{y})$, where $\langle\ ,\ \rangle_\lambda \colon \mathrm{H}^{\mathrm{dR}}_1(A_\mu/E) \times \mathrm{H}^{\mathrm{dR}}_1(A_\mu/E) \to \mathrm{H}^{\mathrm{dR}}_{2\dim A_\mu}(A_\mu/E)$ denotes the pairing induced by λ.

(3) We denote by $\mathcal{A}(\mu)$ the *category of CM data for* μ, whose objects are CM data D_μ, and morphisms from $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu)$ to $D'_\mu = (A'_\mu, i'_\mu, \lambda'_\mu, r'_\mu)$ are isogenies $\varphi\colon A_\mu \to A'_\mu$ satisfying $\varphi \circ i_\mu(x) = i'_\mu(x) \circ \varphi$ for every $x \in M_\mu$, $\varphi^\vee \circ \lambda'_\mu \circ \varphi = c\lambda_\mu$ for some element $c \in \mathbb{Q}^\times$, and $r'_\mu = \varphi_* \circ r_\mu$.

(4) From a CM data $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu)$ for μ, we define another quadruple $D_\mu^\vee = (A_\mu^\vee, i_\mu^\vee, \lambda_\mu^\vee, r_\mu^\vee)$ in which $(A_\mu^\vee, \lambda_\mu^\vee)$ is simply the dual of (A_μ, λ_μ), $i_\mu^\vee$ is defined by the formula $i_\mu^\vee(x) = i_\mu(x)^\vee$ for $x \in M_\mu$, and $r_\mu^\vee \coloneqq (\lambda_\mu)_* \circ r_\mu$.

Proposition 4.6. *Let μ be as in Definition 4.5.*

(1) The category $\mathcal{A}(\mu)$ is a nonempty and connected partially ordered set.
(2) The assignment sending D_μ to $D_\mu^\vee$ induces an equivalence $\mathcal{A}(\mu)^{op} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{A}(\mu^{\mathtt{c}})$ of categories.

Proof. For (1), we first show that $\mathcal{A}(\mu)$ is nonempty. Take a finite abelian extension E'/E such that the character $\mu^{\mathrm{alg}\prime} := \mu^{\mathrm{alg}} \circ \mathrm{N}_{E'/E}$ satisfies [Shi71, (1.12) & (1.13)] for $(K', \Phi') = (E, \Phi_\mu)$, $k = E'$, $(K, \Phi) = (M'_\mu, \Psi_\mu)$ with ∞_1 the archimedean place of M'_μ induced by the inclusion $M'_\mu \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$, and $\mathfrak{a} = O_{M'_\mu}$. For example, we may take an open compact subgroup U of $\mathbf{A}_E^\infty$ on which μ (hence μ^{alg}) is trivial and take E' to be the abelian extension corresponding to U via the global class field theory. By Casselman's theorem [Shi71, Theorem 6], we have a pair (A', i') where A' is an abelian variety over E' and $i' \colon M'_\mu \to \mathrm{End}_{E'}(A')_{\mathbb{Q}}$ is a CM structure such that

- the determinant of the action of $i'(x')$ on the E'-vector space $\mathrm{Lie}_{E'}(A')$ is $\eta'_\mu(x')$ for every $x' \in M'_\mu$,
- the associated CM character of A' with respect to the inclusion $M'_\mu \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$ coincides with $\mu^{\mathrm{alg}\prime}$.

By [Shi71, Lemma 1 & Lemma 2], A' is simple, hence i' is an isomorphism. The same argument in [Den89, (2.1)] implies that there is an isogeny factor A_μ of the abelian variety $\mathrm{Res}_{E'/E} A'$ over E together with a CM structure $i_\mu \colon M_\mu \to \mathrm{End}_E(A_\mu)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ satisfying the conditions in the proposition. In other words, we have obtained the part (A_μ, i_μ) for a CM data for μ. By [Shi71, Theorem 5], we know the existence of λ_μ. The existence of r_μ is obvious. Thus, we obtain an object $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda, r_\mu)$ of $\mathcal{A}(\mu)$

The connectedness of $\mathcal{A}(\mu)$ also follows from [Shi71, Theorem 5]. Finally, the compatibility condition $r'_\mu = \varphi_* \circ r_\mu$ ensures that $\mathcal{A}(\mu)$ is a partially ordered set.

Part (2) is clear from the definition. □

Remark 4.7. Let μ be as in Definition 4.5. Although we will not use in the main body of the article, we propose the definition of the *motive for* μ, denoted by L_μ, as a Grothendieck motive. For a CM data $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu) \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$, let $\mathsf{h}^1(A_\mu, M_\mu)$ be the Picard motive of A_μ with coefficients in M_μ, and $\mathsf{h}^1(D_\mu)$ the direct summand of $\mathsf{h}^1(A_\mu, M_\mu)$ on which the induced action of M_μ via i_μ coincides with the underlying linear action of M_μ. The assignment $D_\mu \mapsto \mathsf{h}^1(D_\mu)$ is a functor from $\mathcal{A}(\mu)$ to the category of Grothendieck motives over E. We put $\mathsf{L}_\mu := \varinjlim_{D_\mu \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)} \mathsf{h}^1(D_\mu)$, which is of rank 1 with coefficients in M_μ. It follows from Proposition 4.6(1) that the canonical map $\mathsf{L}_\mu \to \mathsf{h}^1(D_\mu)$ is an isomorphism for every $D_\mu \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$.

To end this subsection, we construct a certain canonical projector on A_μ, which will be used in Subsection 4.3. Let μ be as in Definition 4.5. Denote by I_μ the set of all complex embeddings of M_μ. We take a CM data $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu) \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$ for μ. For every element $x \in M_\mu$ such that $i_\mu(x) \in \mathrm{End}_E(A_\mu)$, we denote by $\langle x \rangle$ the correspondence

$$A_\mu \xleftarrow{i_\mu(x)} A_\mu \xrightarrow{\mathrm{id}} A_\mu$$

of A_μ. In particular, $\langle x \rangle^* = i_\mu(x)_*$. For every $\tau' \colon E \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$ and every integer $0 \leqslant i \leqslant [M_\mu : \mathbb{Q}]$, we have a canonical decomposition

$$\mathrm{H}^{[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]-i}_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\mu, \mathbb{C}) = \bigoplus_{I \subseteq I_\mu, |I|=i} \mathrm{H}^{[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]-i}_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\mu, \mathbb{C})_I,$$

where $\mathrm{H}^{[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]-i}_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\mu, \mathbb{C})_I$ denotes the subspace on which $\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\langle x \rangle)$ acts by $\prod_{\iota \in I} \iota(x)$ for every $x \in M_\mu$ satisfying $i_\mu(x) \in \mathrm{End}_E(A_\mu)$. Let $\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{B},\tau'}_\mu$ be the endomorphism of $\bigoplus_i \mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\mu, \mathbb{C})$ such that

- the restriction $\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{B},\tau'}_\mu \mid \mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\mu, \mathbb{C})$ is zero if $i \neq [M_\mu : \mathbb{Q}] - 1$,
- the restriction $\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{B},\tau'}_\mu \mid \mathrm{H}^{[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]-1}_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\mu, \mathbb{C})$ is the canonical projection to the direct summand $\mathrm{H}^{[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]-1}_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\mu, \mathbb{C})_{I_1}$, where $I_1 \subseteq I_\mu$ is the subset consisting only of the inclusion $M_\mu \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$.

Definition 4.8. Let $I \subseteq I_\mu$ be a subset.

(1) We say that $x \in M_\mu$ is an *I-generator* if x generates the field M_μ with $i_\mu(x) \in \mathrm{End}_E(A_\mu)$ such that

$$\prod_{\iota \in I} \iota(x) \neq \prod_{\iota \in J} \iota(x)$$

for every $J \subseteq I_\mu$ other than I.

(2) For an I-generator x, we put

$$\mathtt{T}^x_\mu \coloneqq \prod_{J \neq I} \frac{\langle x \rangle - \prod_{\iota \in J} \iota(x)}{\prod_{\iota \in I} \iota(x) - \prod_{\iota \in J} \iota(x)} \in \mathrm{CH}^{[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(A_\mu \times A_\mu)_\mathbb{C}.$$

We now choose an I_1-generator x. It is easy to see that $\mathtt{T}^x_\mu$ lies in $\mathrm{CH}^{[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(A_\mu \times A_\mu)_{M_\mu}$, and moreover $\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\mathtt{T}^x_\mu) = \mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{B},\tau'}_\mu$. In particular, the numerical equivalence class of $\mathtt{T}^x_\mu$ is independent of the choice of x, which we denote by $\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{num}}$. Applying the main theorem of [O'S11][4] to $A_\mu \times A_\mu$, we know that $\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{num}}$ has a canonical lift in $\mathrm{CH}^{[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(A_\mu \times A_\mu)_{M_\mu}$, which we denote by $\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}}$.

Definition 4.9. We call $\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}} \in \mathrm{CH}^{[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(A_\mu \times A_\mu)_{M_\mu}$ the *canonical projector* of A_μ.

Lemma 4.10. *For every $\tau' \colon E \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$, we have $\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}}) = \mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{B},\tau'}$.*

Proof. By part (iii) of the main theorem of [O'S11], we know that $\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}}$ hence $\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}} - \mathtt{T}_\mu^{x}$ commute with $\langle y\rangle$ for all $y \in M_\mu$ such that $i_\mu(y) \in \mathrm{End}_E(A_\mu)$. Now we show that $\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}} - \mathtt{T}_\mu^{x}$ is homologically trivial. If not, then there exist some $0 \leqslant i \leqslant [M_\mu : \mathbb{Q}]$ and a set $I \subseteq I_\mu$ with $|I| = [M_\mu : \mathbb{Q}] - i$ such that the restriction $\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}} - \mathtt{T}_\mu^{x}) \mid \mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A, \mathbb{C})_I$ is the canonical embedding.

Now we take an I^c-generator $y \in M_\mu$, where $I^c := I_\mu \setminus I$. Then the cycle $\mathtt{T}_\mu^{y}$ (Definition 4.8) has nonzero intersection number with $\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}} - \mathtt{T}_\mu^{x}$. This contradicts with the fact that $\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}} - \mathtt{T}_\mu^{x}$ is numerically trivial. Thus, the lemma follows. □

4.2. Albanese of unitary Shimura varieties

Let $n \geqslant 2$ be an integer. Let $\mathbf{V}$ be a totally definite incoherent hermitian space over $\mathbf{A}_E$ of rank n (Definition C.3). We distinguish between two cases:

Noncompact Case: $d = 1$, and either $n \geqslant 3$ or $n = 2$ and the hermitian space $\mathbf{V} \otimes_{\mathbf{A}} \mathbb{Q}_p$ is isotropic for every rational prime p.

Compact Case: if it is not in the Noncompact Case.

Let $\mathbf{G} := \mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})$ be the unitary group of $\mathbf{V}$, which is a reductive group over $\mathbf{A}_F$. Let $\{\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K\}_K$ be the projective system of Shimura varieties for $\mathbf{V}$ indexed by sufficiently small open compact subgroups K of $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ (Definition C.6). Every scheme $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ is smooth, quasi-projective, and of dimension $n-1$ over E; it is projective if and only if we are in the Compact Case. In all cases, we have the compactified Shimura variety $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K$ (Definition C.8). Put

$$X_K := \widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K$$

for short. Then $\{X_K\}_K$ is a projective system of smooth projective schemes in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/E}$ of dimension $n-1$. For $K' \subseteq K$, we denote the transition morphism

[4] The author states the theorem with coefficients in $\mathbb{Q}$. However, by [O'S11, Corollary 6.2.6], one may replace $\mathbb{Q}$ by any field of characteristic zero, for example, M_μ.

by $u_K^{K'}\colon X_{K'} \to X_K$, which is a generically finite dominant morphism. Put $X_\infty \coloneqq \varprojlim_K X_K$.

We denote by A_K the Albanese variety Alb_{X_K} of X_K (Definition 2.3) for short, and by

$$\alpha_K \coloneqq \alpha_{X_K}\colon \nabla X_K \to A_K \tag{4.1}$$

the Albanese morphism (see Definition 2.1 for the meaning of ∇). By functoriality, we obtain a projective system $\{A_K\}_K$. Put

$$A_\infty \coloneqq \varprojlim_K A_K,$$

which is an abelian group pro-object in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/E}$. Then the Hecke correspondences provide a homomorphism $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty) \to \mathrm{Aut}_E(A_\infty)$.

To study isogeny factors of A_K, it suffices to study the L-function of $\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}((A_K)_{E^{\mathrm{ac}}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})$ by Faltings' isogeny theorem. We start from describing its Betti cohomology $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_K, \mathbb{C})$. For every embedding $\tau'\colon E \to \mathbb{C}$, put

$$\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\infty, \mathbb{C}) \coloneqq \varinjlim_K \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_K, \mathbb{C}),$$

which is an admissible representation of $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$. To study this representation, we need to recall the oscillator representations of unitary groups.

Definition 4.11. An *adèlic oscillator triple* is a triple (μ, ε, χ) consisting of

- a conjugate symplectic automorphic character (Definition 4.1) $\mu = \otimes\mu_v\colon E^\times\backslash \mathbf{A}_E^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ (whose value is necessarily in $\mathbb{C}^1$),
- a collection $\varepsilon = (\varepsilon_v \in E_v^{-\times} / \mathrm{N}_{E_v/F_v} E_v^\times)_v$ for every nonarchimedean place v of F such that $\varepsilon_v \in O_{E_v}^\times \mathrm{N}_{E_v/F_v} E_v^\times$ for all but finitely many v, and
- an automorphic character $\chi = \otimes\chi_v\colon E^1\backslash (\mathbf{A}_E^\infty)^1 \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ (whose value is necessarily in $\mathbb{C}^1$).

For an adèlic oscillator triple (μ, ε, χ), the local oscillator representation $\omega(\mu_v, \varepsilon_v, \chi_v)$ of $\mathbf{G}(F_v)$ introduced in Subsection D.1 is unramified for all but finitely many v. Thus, it makes sense to define the *adèlic oscillator representation* attached to (μ, ε, χ)

$$\omega(\mu, \varepsilon, \chi) \coloneqq {\bigotimes_v}' \omega(\mu_v, \varepsilon_v, \chi_v),$$

which is an irreducible admissible representation of $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$.

Definition 4.12. In an adèlic oscillator triple (μ, ε, χ), we say that ε is *μ-admissible* if there exists some $e \in E^{\times -}$ such that

- $\varepsilon_v = e\,\mathrm{N}_{E_v/F_v} E_v^\times$ for every nonarchimedean place v of F, and
- $\tau'(e)$ has negative imaginary part for every $\tau' \in \Phi_\mu$.

It is clear by Remark 4.4 that ε is μ-admissible if and only if $-\varepsilon$ is $\mu^{\mathtt{c}}$-admissible.

Proposition 4.13. *Suppose that $n \geqslant 3$. Then for every embedding $\tau' \colon E \to \mathbb{C}$, there is an isomorphism*

$$\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\infty, \mathbb{C}) \simeq \bigoplus_{(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)} \omega(\mu, \varepsilon, \chi)$$

of $\mathbb{C}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-modules, where the direct sum is taken over all adèlic oscillator triples in which μ is of weight one and ε is μ-admissible.

Proof. By Lemma 2.4, we have a canonical isomorphism

$$\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\infty, \mathbb{C}) \simeq \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(X_\infty, \mathbb{C}) \coloneqq \varinjlim_K \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(X_K, \mathbb{C})$$

of $\mathbb{C}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-modules. We regard E as a subfield of $\mathbb{C}$ via a fixed embedding $\tau' \in \Phi_E$ and put $\tau \coloneqq \tau' \mid F$. We choose a CM type Φ that contains τ'. Take a hermitian space V that is τ-nearby to $\mathbf{V}$ (Definition C.4). Put $\mathrm{G} \coloneqq \mathrm{Res}_{F/\mathbb{Q}}\,\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})$ and $\mathrm{h} \coloneqq \mathrm{h}^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$ for short. Then by Propositions C.5 and (C.2), we have an isomorphism

$$\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(X_\infty, \mathbb{C}) \simeq \varinjlim_K \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B}}(\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h})_K, \mathbb{C})$$

of $\mathbb{C}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-modules. By [MR92, Lemma 1], for every K, there is a canonical isomorphism

$$\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B}}(\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h})_K, \mathbb{C}) \simeq \mathrm{IH}^1(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h})_K, \mathbb{C}),$$

where the right-hand side is the complex analytic intersection cohomology of the Baily–Borel compactification $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h})_K$ of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h})_K$. Combining (D.2) and (D.1), we have an isomorphism

$$\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\infty, \mathbb{C}) \simeq \bigoplus_\pi m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi) \cdot \mathrm{H}^1(\mathfrak{g}, \mathrm{K}_{\mathrm{G}}; \pi_\infty) \otimes \pi^\infty$$

of $\mathbb{C}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-modules. We say that an irreducible admissible representation π of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A})$ contributes to the Albanese if $m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi) > 0$ and $\mathrm{H}^1(\mathfrak{g}, \mathrm{K}_\mathrm{G}; \pi_\infty) \neq \{0\}$. We determine all such π together with the value $m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi)$. By the proof of [BMM16, Proposition 13.4] (with $m = n$, $p = n-1$, $q = 1$, $a + b = 1$), we know that there exists a strictly unitary automorphic character (Definition B.2) $\mu\colon E^\times\backslash\mathbf{A}_E^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ such that the partial L-function $L^S(s, \pi \times \mu)$ has a simple pole at s_0 with $s_0 \geqslant \frac{n}{2}$ where S is a finite set of places of F containing all archimedean ones and such that for $v \notin S$, both π_v and μ_v are unramified.[5] We separate the discussion into two cases.

Case 1. Suppose that π contributes to the Albanese and $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi) > 0$. Let V_π be a cuspidal realization of π (Definition B.1). By Corollary B.5, s_0 is either $\frac{n+1}{2}$ or $\frac{n}{2}$, not both. If $s_0 = \frac{n+1}{2}$, then Theorem B.4 implies that $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi) \neq \{0\}$, where W is the zero skew-hermitian space. By Corollary B.6(1), V_π is a character, hence $\mathrm{H}^1(\mathfrak{g}, \mathrm{K}_\mathrm{G}; \pi_\infty) = \{0\}$, which is a contradiction. Thus, we must have $s_0 = \frac{n}{2}$. By Theorem B.4, we have a one-dimensional skew-hermitian space W such that $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi) \neq \{0\}$ and is cuspidal. By Corollary B.6(1), we have $V_\pi = \Theta^{-\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu^{-1},\nu^{-1})}(\pi_\mathrm{W})$. Note that the central character χ of π satisfies $\chi_\infty = 1$. In other words, there is a unique element $e \in E^{-\times}/\operatorname{N}_{E/F} E^\times$ determined by W such that $\pi^\infty \simeq \omega(\mu, \varepsilon_e, \chi)$, where ε_e is the collection given by e.[6] To determine π_∞, we suppose that $\Phi_F = \{\tau_1 = \tau, \tau_2, \dots, \tau_d\}$ and $\Phi = \{\tau_1^+, \dots, \tau_d^+\}$ with $\pi(\tau_i^+) = \tau_i$. Using Φ, we obtain an isomorphism $\mathrm{G}_\mathbb{R} \simeq \mathrm{U}(n-1,1)_\mathbb{R} \times \mathrm{U}(n,0)_\mathbb{R} \times \cdots \times \mathrm{U}(n,0)_\mathbb{R}$, and accordingly a decomposition $\pi_\infty = \otimes_{i=1}^d \pi_{\infty i}$. Under the notation from Subsection D.1, we have $\pi_{\infty 1} \simeq \omega_{n-1,1}^{m_1,\pm,1}$ and $\pi_{\infty i} \simeq \omega_{n,0}^{m_i,\pm,1}$ for $i \geqslant 2$, where $(m_1, \dots, m_d)$ is the weight of μ and the sign in the parameter is the sign of $i^{-1}\tau_i^+(e)$. By Lemma D.2, we know that μ is of weight one and ε_e is μ-admissible. Moreover, $\mathrm{H}^1(\mathfrak{g}, \mathrm{K}_\mathrm{G}; \pi_\infty)$ is of dimension 1. By Corollary B.6(3), we have $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi) = 1$.

Case 2. Suppose that π contributes to the Albanese and $m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi) - m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi) > 0$. This might happen only when $F = \mathbb{Q}$. In this case, V has Witt index 1. Write $\mathrm{V} = \mathrm{V}_0 \oplus \mathrm{D}$ where V_0 is anisotropic and D is a hyperbolic hermitian plane. Let V_π be a discrete realization (Definition B.1) of π that is perpendicular to $\mathrm{L}^2_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\mathrm{G})$. By Langlands theory of Eisenstein series [MW95], there exist a strictly unitary automorphic character $\mu\colon E^\times\backslash\mathbf{A}_E^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$, an irreducible subrepresentation $V_{\pi_0} \subseteq \mathrm{L}^2_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_0))$ of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_0)(\mathbf{A}_F)$ with the

[5] Note that π is assumed to be cuspidal in the statement of [BMM16, Proposition 13.4]. However, this step works for π discrete.

[6] Here, we have replaced μ by its inverse to match notation in the statement of the proposition.

underlying representation π_0, and a real number $s_1 > 0$, such that V_π is contained in $\mathscr{R}_{s_1}(V_{\pi_0} \boxtimes \mu')$: the space generated by residues of $\{\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{Q}}(g; f_s) \,|\, f \in \mathrm{I}(V_{\pi_0} \boxtimes \mu')\}$ at $s = s_1$. Here, we adopt the notation in Subsection B.2.[7] Since $L^S(s, \pi) = L^S(s - s_1, \mu') \cdot L^S(s, \pi_0)$, and $L^S(s, \pi_0 \times \mu)$ can not have poles at $s_0 \geqslant \frac{n}{2}$ by Corollary B.5, we must have $s_1 = s_0 - 1$ and $\mu' = \mu^{-1}$. Again by Corollary B.5, μ' is conjugate self-dual, so is μ, and $\mu' = \mu^{\mathtt{c}}$. The appearance of the residue implies that $\{\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{Q}}(g; f_s) \,|\, f \in \mathrm{I}(V_{\pi_0} \boxtimes \mu^{\mathtt{c}})\}$ has a pole at $s_0 - 1$. If $s_0 = \frac{n+1}{2}$, then by the similar argument in Case 1, we conclude that π_0 is a character, so is π_1. This contradicts with $\mathrm{H}^1(\mathfrak{g}, \mathrm{K}_{\mathrm{G}}; \pi_\infty) \neq \{0\}$. Thus, $s_0 = \frac{n}{2}$ and $s_1 = \frac{n-2}{2}$. By Corollary B.6(2) and the similar argument in Case 1, we conclude that $V_\pi = \Theta^{-\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu^{-1}, \nu^{-1})}(\pi_{\mathrm{W}})$ for a unique one-dimensional skew-hermitian space W and a unique character π_{W}; and $\pi^\infty \simeq \omega(\mu, \varepsilon_e, \chi)$ in which μ is of weight one and ε_e is μ-admissible. Moreover, we have $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi) = 1$ and $m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi) = 1$ by Corollary B.6(3).

To summarize, we have shown that if an irreducible admissible representation π of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A})$ contributes to the Albanese, then $\pi^\infty \simeq \omega(\mu, \varepsilon, \chi)$ for a unique adèlic oscillator triple in which μ is of weight one and ε is μ-admissible, and $m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi) = 1$. Conversely, for every such adèlic oscillator triple (μ, ε, χ), there exists a pair $(\mathrm{W}, \pi_{\mathrm{W}})$, unique up to isomorphism, such that if we denote by π an irreducible subrepresentation of $\Theta^{\mathrm{V}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{W}}(\pi_{\mathrm{W}})$, then $\omega(\mu, \varepsilon, \chi)$ is isomorphic to π^∞ and $\mathrm{H}^1(\mathfrak{g}, \mathrm{K}_{\mathrm{G}}; \pi_\infty) \neq \{0\}$. Moreover, by the Rallis inner product formula,[8] $\Theta^{\mathrm{V}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{W}}(\pi_{\mathrm{W}})$ is contained in $\mathrm{L}^2_{\mathrm{disc}}(\mathrm{G})$. Thus, we may apply the above discussions to the representation π to conclude that the dimension of $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\infty, \mathbb{C})[\omega(\mu, \varepsilon, \chi)]$ is 1. The proposition follows. ☐

Remark 4.14. When $n = 3$, Proposition 4.13 can be deduced from [GR91, Rog92].

Now we study the ℓ-adic cohomology of A_∞. Take an embedding $\tau' \colon E \to \mathbb{C}$, a rational prime ℓ, and an isomorphism $\iota_\ell \colon \mathbb{C} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$. We have a canonical isomorphism

$$\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(A_K \otimes_{E,\tau'} \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}) \simeq \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_K, \mathbb{C}) \otimes_{\mathbb{C},\iota_\ell} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$$

by the comparison theorem. Put

$$\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(A_\infty \otimes_{E,\tau'} \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}) \coloneqq \varinjlim_K \mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(A_K \otimes_{E,\tau'} \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}),$$

[7]The pair $(\mathrm{V}, \mathrm{V}_0)$ correspond to the pair $(\mathrm{V}_1, \mathrm{V})$ in Subsection B.2.

[8]Note that the global theta lifting $\Theta^{\mathrm{V}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{W}}(\pi_{\mathrm{W}})$ is always in Weil's convergent range.

which is a $\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}[\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\tau'(E)) \times \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-module.

Suppose that $n \geqslant 3$ and consider an adèlic oscillator triple (μ, ε, χ) in which μ is of weight one and ε is μ-admissible. Then

$$\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]}\left(\iota_\ell \circ \omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi), \mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(A_\infty \otimes_{E,\tau'} \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})\right)$$

is a representation of $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\tau'(E))$ over $\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$. By Proposition 4.13, such representation is an ℓ-adic character, denoted by

$$\rho_{\tau',\iota_\ell}(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)\colon \mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\tau'(E)) \to (\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})^\times.$$

It induces, via the isomorphism ι_ℓ, an automorphic character

$$\rho_{\tau',\ell}(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)\colon \tau'(E)^\times \backslash \mathbf{A}_{\tau'(E)}^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times.$$

It is easy to see that the character $\rho_{\tau',\ell}(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ does not depend on the isomorphism of ι_ℓ, which justifies its notation.

Theorem 4.15. *Suppose that $n \geqslant 3$ and let (μ,ε,χ) be an adèlic oscillator triple in which μ is of weight one and ε is μ-admissible. Then we have*

$$\rho_{\tau',\ell}(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi) \circ \tau' = \mu^{\mathrm{alg}}$$

for every $\tau' \in \Phi_\mu$ and every rational prime ℓ.

Proof. We fix a rational prime ℓ and an isomorphism $\iota_\ell\colon \mathbb{C} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$. We also fix an element $\tau' \in \Phi_\mu$, and identify E as a subfield of $\mathbb{C}$ via τ'. Let V be the hermitian space that is τ-nearby to $\mathbf{V}$ as in the proof of Proposition 4.13, and $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})$ the corresponding Shimura variety from Subsection C.1 with $\mathrm{G} := \mathrm{Res}_{F/\mathbb{Q}}\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})$ and $\mathrm{h} := \mathrm{h}^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$. Then in view of the discussion in Subsection D.2, we have canonical isomorphisms

$$\begin{aligned}&\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(A_\infty \otimes_{E,\tau'} \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}) \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}},\iota_\ell^{-1}} \mathbb{C} \\ &\qquad \simeq \mathrm{H}^1_{(2)}(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathbb{C}) \simeq \bigoplus_{\chi} \mathrm{H}^1(\mathfrak{g},\mathrm{K}_\mathrm{G}; \mathrm{L}^2(\mathrm{G}(\mathbb{Q})\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}),\chi)).\end{aligned}$$

For every orthogonal decomposition $\mathrm{V} = \mathrm{V}_\star \oplus \mathrm{V}_\star^\perp$ of hermitian spaces such that $\mathrm{V}_\star^\perp$ is totally positive definite, we have similarly the Shimura variety $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}_\star,\mathrm{h}_\star)$ together with the morphism $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}_\star,\mathrm{h}_\star) \to \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})$ over E. For an element $e \in E^{\times-}$, we choose a maximal isotropic F-subspace V^e of the symplectic space $(\mathrm{Res}_{E/F}\mathrm{V}, \mathrm{Tr}_{E/F}\, e(\ ,\ )_\mathrm{V})$. Then $\mathrm{V}_\star^e := \mathrm{V}^e \cap \mathrm{Res}_{E/F}\mathrm{V}_\star$

is a maximal isotropic F-subspace of $(\mathrm{Res}_{E/F}\mathrm{V}_\star, \mathrm{Tr}_{E/F}\, e(\ ,\ )_{\mathrm{V}_\star})$. Denote by $V(\mu, e) \subseteq \mathscr{C}^\infty(\mathrm{G}(\mathbb{Q})\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}), \mathbb{C})$ the subspace of theta functions

$$\theta_\mu^\phi(g) \coloneqq \sum_{v\in\mathrm{V}^e}(\omega_{\mu,\varepsilon}(g)\phi)(v)$$

on $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A})$, where ϕ is in the Schwartz space $\mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}^e(\mathbf{A}_F))$ in which we use the Fock model at archimedean places. Similarly, we define the subspace $V_\star(\mu, e) \subseteq \mathscr{C}^\infty(\mathrm{G}_\star(\mathbb{Q})\backslash\mathrm{G}_\star(\mathbf{A}))$.

We claim that the map $\mathscr{C}^\infty(\mathrm{G}(\mathbb{Q})\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}), \mathbb{C}) \to \mathscr{C}^\infty(\mathrm{G}_\star(\mathbb{Q})\backslash\mathrm{G}_\star(\mathbf{A}), \mathbb{C})$ induced by the inclusion $\mathrm{G}_\star \hookrightarrow \mathrm{G}$ sends $V(\mu, e)$ to $V_\star(\mu, e)$. In fact, we can find finitely many pairs $(\phi_{\star,i}, \phi_{\star,i}^\perp)$ with $\phi_{\star,i} \in \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}_\star^e(\mathbf{A}_F))$ and $\phi_{\star,i}^\perp \in \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}_\star^{\perp e}(\mathbf{A}_F))$, where $\mathrm{V}_\star^{\perp e} \coloneqq \mathrm{V}^e \cap \mathrm{Res}_{E/F}\mathrm{V}_\star^\perp$, such that

$$\phi(v_\star, v_\star^\perp) = \sum_i \phi_{\star,i}(v_\star)\cdot\phi_{\star,i}^\perp(v_\star^\perp)$$

for every $v_\star \in \mathrm{V}_\star^{\perp e}(\mathbf{A}_F)$ and $v_\star^\perp \in \mathrm{V}_\star^{\perp e}(\mathbf{A}_F)$. Then for $g_\star \in \mathrm{G}_\star(\mathbf{A}) \subseteq \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A})$, we have

$$\begin{aligned}\theta_\mu^\phi(g_\star) &= \sum_i\left(\sum_{v_\star\in\mathrm{V}_\star^e}(\omega_{\mu,\varepsilon}(g_\star)\phi_{\star,i})(v_\star)\right)\left(\sum_{v_\star^\perp\in\mathrm{V}_\star^{\perp e}}\phi_{\star,i}^\perp(v_\star^\perp)\right)\\ &= \sum_i\left(\sum_{v_\star^\perp\in\mathrm{V}_\star^{\perp e}}\phi_{\star,i}^\perp(v_\star^\perp)\right)\theta_\mu^{\phi_{\star,i}}(g_\star).\end{aligned}$$

Thus, the claim follows.

To prove the theorem, note that for every class $c \in \mathrm{H}^1_{(2)}(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}), \mathbb{C})$, using the same proof of [MR92, Proposition 6], one can find a decomposition $\mathrm{V} = \mathrm{V}_\star \oplus \mathrm{V}_\star^\perp$ as above with $\dim\mathrm{V}_\star = 2$ such that the image of c under the restriction map $\mathrm{H}^1_{(2)}(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}), \mathbb{C})$ in $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B}}(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}_\star, \mathrm{h}_\star), \mathbb{C})$ is nonzero.[9] We denote such image of $c_\star$, and note that $c_\star$ actually belongs to (the image of) $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}_\star, \mathrm{h}_\star), \mathbb{C})$. Then the theorem follows from the above claim, Remark D.5, and Theorem D.6(1). □

[9]Although [MR92, Proposition 6] only implies the existence of such $\mathrm{V}_\star$ with $\dim\mathrm{V}_\star = 3$, its proof actually shows the existence of such $\mathrm{V}_\star$ with $\dim\mathrm{V}_\star = 2$ by only changing the term $n-2$ to $n-1$ in the proof of Lemma B. The authors of [MR92] presented their argument for $\dim\mathrm{V}_\star = 3$ simply because the property they aimed to reduce does not hold when $\dim\mathrm{V}_\star = 2$.

Definition 4.16. Let $\mu\colon E^\times\backslash\mathbf{A}_E^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ be a conjugate symplectic character of weight one. For every object $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu) \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$ (Definition 4.5), the $\mathbb{Q}$-vector space $\mathrm{Hom}_E(A_\infty, A_\mu)_\mathbb{Q}$ is an $M_\mu[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-module, where M_μ acts via i_μ and $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ acts M_μ-linearly via its action on A_∞. Put

$$\Omega(\mu) \coloneqq \varinjlim_{D_\mu \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)} \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_\infty, A_\mu)_\mathbb{Q}$$

in the category of $M_\mu[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-modules.

Remark 4.17. It follows from Proposition 4.6(1) that for every object $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu) \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$, the canonical map $\mathrm{Hom}_E(A_\infty, A_\mu)_\mathbb{Q} \to \Omega(\mu)$ is an isomorphism.

Theorem 4.18. *There is an isomorphism*

$$\Omega(\mu) \otimes_{M_\mu} \mathbb{C} \simeq \bigoplus_{\varepsilon} \bigoplus_{\chi} \omega(\mu, \varepsilon, \chi)$$

of $\mathbb{C}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$*-modules, where the direct sum is taken over all* ε, χ *such that* ε *is* μ*-admissible. Moreover,*

(1) For every object $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu) \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$*, we have a canonical isomorphism* $\Omega(\mu)^K \simeq \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu)_\mathbb{Q}$ *for every sufficiently small open compact subgroup* $K \subseteq \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$*.*
(2) The $\mathbb{C}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$*-modules in the direct sum in Theorem 4.18 are mutually non-isomorphic.*
(3) For every given ε *that is* μ*-admissible, the subspace* $\bigoplus_\chi \omega(\mu, \varepsilon, \chi)$ *is stable under the action of* $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/M_\mu)$*.*

Proof. Take an arbitrary object $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu) \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$ and identify $\Omega(\mu)$ with $\mathrm{Hom}_E(A_\infty, A_\mu)_\mathbb{Q}$ by Remark 4.17.

Take an embedding $\tau'\colon E \to \mathbb{C}$ in Φ_μ. It is clear that the maximal subspace of the complex vector space $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\mu, \mathbb{C})$ over which M_μ acts via the inclusion $M_\mu \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$ has dimension 1. We choose a basis α of this subspace. Then we obtain a map $\Omega(\mu) \to \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\infty, \mathbb{C})$ by pulling back α, which is $\mathbb{C}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-linear. It canonically extends to a map

$$\Omega(\mu) \otimes_{M_\mu} \mathbb{C} \to \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\infty, \mathbb{C}). \tag{4.2}$$

To compute this map, we choose a rational prime ℓ and an isomorphism $\iota_\ell\colon \mathbb{C} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$. By the comparison theorem, (4.2) induces the following map

$$\Omega(\mu) \otimes_{M_\mu, \iota_\ell} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}} \to \mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(A_\infty \otimes_{E,\tau'} \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})$$

by pulling back α, as a class in $\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(A_\mu \otimes_{E,\tau'} \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\text{ac}})$. By Faltings' isogeny theorem [Fal83], we have a canonical isomorphism

$$\Omega(\mu) \otimes_{M_\mu,\iota_\ell} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\text{ac}} \simeq \mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\text{ac}}[\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\tau'(E))]} \left(\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\text{ac}} \cdot \alpha, \mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(A_\mu \otimes_{E,\tau'} \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\text{ac}})\right).$$

However, by Definition 4.5(2), the action of $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\tau'(E))$ on the line $\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\text{ac}} \cdot \alpha$ spanned by α is given by the automorphic character

$$\iota_\ell \circ \mu^{\text{alg}} \circ (\tau')^{-1} \colon \tau'(E)^\times \backslash \mathbf{A}^\times_{\tau'(E)} \to (\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\text{ac}})^\times.$$

When $n \geqslant 3$ (resp. $n = 2$), by Proposition 4.13 (resp. Proposition D.4(1) with Remark D.5) and Theorem 4.15 (resp. Theorem D.6(1)), we have an isomorphism

$$\begin{aligned}&\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\text{ac}}[\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\tau'(E))]} \left(\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\text{ac}} \cdot \alpha, \mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(A_\mu \otimes_{E,\tau'} \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\text{ac}})\right)\\ &\simeq \bigoplus_{\varepsilon} \bigoplus_{\chi} \omega(\mu, \varepsilon, \chi) \otimes_{\mathbb{C},\iota_\ell} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\text{ac}}\end{aligned}$$

of $\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\text{ac}}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-modules induced by pulling back α, where the direct sum is taken over all ε, χ such that ε is μ-admissible. Thus, we obtain an isomorphism as in the theorem, which depends only on α, not on ℓ, ι_ℓ, and τ'.

The additional statement (1) follows from the above discussion as well. Statement (2) follows from Lemma D.1.

Now we consider statement (3). Since $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/M_\mu)$ stabilizes μ and by (2), it suffices to show that for every rational prime p, the image of $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/M_\mu)$ under the p-adic cyclotomic character $\chi_p \colon \mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q}) \to \mathbb{Z}_p^\times$ is contained in $\mathbb{Z}_p^\times \cap \mathrm{N}_{E_\mathfrak{p}/F_\mathfrak{p}} E_\mathfrak{p}^\times$ for every prime $\mathfrak{p}$ of F above p. This only becomes a problem if $\mathfrak{p}$ is ramified in E. To ease notation, we suppress the subscript $\mathfrak{p}$. So we have a ramified quadratic extension E/F, where $F/\mathbb{Q}_p$ is a finite extension. Put $U_{E/F} \coloneqq \mathbb{Z}_p^\times \cap \mathrm{N}_{E/F} E^\times$, which we may assume a subgroup of $\mathbb{Z}_p^\times$ of index 2. Denote by $M_{E/F} \subseteq \mathbb{C}$ the subfield corresponding to the kernel of the composite homomorphism $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q}) \xrightarrow{\chi_p} \mathbb{Z}_p^\times \to \mathbb{Z}_p^\times/U_{E/F}$, which is a quadratic field. Thus, our goal is to show that $M_{E/F}$ is contained in M_μ.

We first assume p odd. Then the residue extension degree f of $F/\mathbb{Q}_p$ must be odd. Write $E = F(\sqrt{u})$ for a uniformizer u of F. Then $\mu(\sqrt{u})^2 = \mu(\sqrt{u}^2) = \mu(-\mathrm{N}_{E/F}\, u) = \mu(-1)$.

- If $\mu(-1) = 1$, then -1 is a quadratic residue modulo p, hence $M_{E/F} = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{p})$. On the other hand, since $\mu(\sqrt{u}) = \pm 1$, we have $\mu^{\text{alg}}(\sqrt{u}) = \pm p^{f/2}$. Thus, M_μ contains $\sqrt{p}$ as f is odd.

- If $\mu(-1) = -1$, then -1 is not a quadratic residue modulo p, hence $M_{E/F} = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-p})$. On the other hand, since $\mu(\sqrt{u}) = \pm\sqrt{-1}$, we have $\mu^{\mathrm{alg}}(\sqrt{u}) = \pm\sqrt{-1}p^{f/2}$. Thus, M_μ contains $\sqrt{-p}$ as f is odd.

We now assume $p = 2$. Write $v_F\colon F \to \mathbb{Z} \cup \{\infty\}$ for the valuation function on F. We choose an Eisenstein polynomial $X^2 + aX + b$ for E/F with $v_F(a) \geqslant 1$ and $v_F(b) = 1$. Put $d \coloneqq \min\{2v_F(a) - 1, v_F(4)\}$, which is an invariant of E/F. There are three cases.

- Suppose that $M_{E/F} = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-1})$. Then $U_{E/F} = 1 + 4\mathbb{Z}_2$. If $d = v_F(4)$, then by [BH06, Proposition 41.2(2)], 3 is contained in $\mathrm{N}_{E/F}\, E^\times$, which is a contradiction. Thus, we have $d < v_F(4)$. Then we can find $u \in O_F^\times$ such that $E = F(\sqrt{u})$. It follows that $\mu(\sqrt{u})^2 = \mu(-1) = -1$ since $-1 \notin U_{E/F}$. Thus, $\mu^{\mathrm{alg}}(\sqrt{u}) = \pm\sqrt{-1}$ is contained in M_μ.
- Suppose that $M_{E/F} = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{2})$. Then $U_{E/F} = \pm 1 + 8\mathbb{Z}_2$. In particular, $U_{E/F}$ does not contain 5, hence the residue extension degree f of $F/\mathbb{Q}_2$ must be odd. Moreover, by [BH06, Proposition 41.2(2)] again, we must have $d = v_F(4)$, hence $v_F(a) \geqslant v_F(2)+1$. Then we can find a uniformizer u of F such that $E = F(\sqrt{u})$. We have $\mu(\sqrt{u})^2 = \mu(-1) = 1$, and $\mu^{\mathrm{alg}}(\sqrt{u}) = \pm 2^{f/2}$. In particular, $\sqrt{2}$ is contained in M_μ.
- Suppose that $M_{E/F} = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-2})$. Then $U_{E/F} = \pm 1 + 2 + 8\mathbb{Z}_2$. In particular, $U_{E/F}$ does not contain 5 or -1. The remaining discussion is same as the above case, which we omit.

Statement (3) is proved. $\square$

Theorem 4.18(2,3) allows us to make the following definition.

Definition 4.19. For every collection ε that is μ-admissible, we denote by $\Omega(\mu,\varepsilon)$ the unique $M_\mu[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-submodule of $\Omega(\mu)$, such that $\Omega(\mu,\varepsilon)\otimes_{M_\mu}\mathbb{C}$ is isomorphic to $\bigoplus_\chi \omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ as a $\mathbb{C}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-module.

Corollary 4.20. *Take an arbitrary object $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu) \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$. For every sufficiently small open compact subgroup K of $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$, there is an isogeny decomposition*

$$A_K \sim \prod_\mu A_\mu^{d(\mu,K)}, \qquad \textit{resp. } A_K^{\mathrm{end}} \sim \prod_\mu A_\mu^{d(\mu,K)}$$

of abelian varieties over E when $n \geqslant 3$ (resp. $n = 2$), where the product is taken over representatives of $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q})$*-orbits of all conjugate symplectic* *automorphic characters of* $\mathbf{A}_E^\times$ *of weight one. Here,* A_K^{end} *is the endoscopic part of* A_K *when* $n = 2$*, defined in* (D.3)*, and*

$$d(\mu, K) \coloneqq \sum_{\varepsilon} \sum_{\chi} \dim_{\mathbb{C}} \omega(\mu, \varepsilon, \chi)^K,$$

where the sum is taken over all ε, χ *such that* ε *is* μ*-admissible.*

It is clear that the integer $d(\mu, K)$ depends only on the $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q})$-orbit of μ.

Proof. This is a direct consequence of Theorem 4.18. □

Remark 4.21. Corollary 4.20 has a very interesting implication. Namely, if $n \geqslant 3$ and X_K has exotic smooth reduction, that is, X_K has proper smooth reduction at some nonarchimedean place of E that is ramified over F, then $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{dR}}(X_K/E) = \{0\}$ since A_μ cannot have good reduction at such a place.

At the end of this subsection, we will construct a canonical pairing

$$(\, , \,)_\mu \colon \Omega(\mu) \times \Omega(\mu^{\mathtt{c}}) \to M_\mu \tag{4.3}$$

that is M_μ-bilinear, non-degenerate, and $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$-invariant.

Definition 4.22. We define

(1) the *Hodge divisor* D_K on X_K, as an element in $\mathrm{CH}^1(X_K)_{\mathbb{Q}}$, to be
- the usual Hodge divisor on the Shimura variety $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ if $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ is proper (Compact Case),
- the canonical extension of the usual Hodge divisor on $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ to X_K if $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ is not proper (Noncompact Case).

(2) the *canonical volume* of K to be

$$\mathrm{vol}(K) \coloneqq \frac{1}{\deg D_K^{n-1} \cdot |\pi_0((X_K)_{E^{\mathrm{ac}}})|},$$

in which $\deg D_K^{n-1}$ is regarded as a constant positive integer by Lemma 4.23(4) below.

Lemma 4.23. *We have*

(1) The Hodge divisor D_K *is almost ample (Definition 2.8).*
(2) For every transition morphism $u_K^{K'} \colon X_{K'} \to X_K$*,* $(u_K^{K'})^* D_K$ *is rationally equivalent to* $D_{K'}$*.*

(3) *For every* $g \in \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$, $\mathtt{T}_g^* D_K$ *is rationally equivalent to* $D_{gKg^{-1}}$, *where* $\mathtt{T}_g \colon X_{gKg^{-1}} \to X_K$ *is the Hecke translation.*
(4) *The degree function* $\deg D_K^{n-1}$ *is a constant positive integer on* $\pi_0(X_K)$.

Proof. Consider (1) first. If $n = 2$, then (for sufficiently small K) X_K has genus at least 2. Since D_K has positive degree on every connected component, it is ample, hence almost ample. Now suppose that $n \geqslant 3$. If we are in the Compact Case, then the usual Hodge divisor is already ample. If we are in the Noncompact Case, then D_K is the pullback of the Hodge divisor on the Baily–Borel compactification of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$. Since the latter is ample, D_K is almost ample (and in fact, *not* ample).

For (2,3), since D_K is the (canonical extension of the) usual Hodge divisor of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$, it is functorial under pullbacks and Hecke translation. For (4), the positivity follows from (1) and Remark 2.10; the constancy is a consequence of (2,3). □

Thus, by Proposition 2.9, we obtain a polarization

$$\theta_K \coloneqq \theta_{X_K, D_K} \colon A_K^\vee \to A_K.$$

Now we define the pairing (4.3). We choose an object $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu) \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$, which induces the object $D_\mu^\vee = (A_\mu^\vee, i_\mu^\vee, \lambda_\mu^\vee, r_\mu^\vee) \in \mathcal{A}(\mu^\mathtt{c})$. Then we have $\Omega(\mu) = \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_\infty, A_\mu)_\mathbb{Q}$ and $\Omega(\mu^\mathtt{c}) = \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_\infty, A_\mu^\vee)_\mathbb{Q}$. It suffices to consider elements $\phi \in \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_\infty, A_\mu)$ and $\phi_\mathtt{c} \in \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_\infty, A_\mu^\vee)$. Since both A_μ and $A_{\mu^\mathtt{c}}$ are of finite type, we may choose some K such that both ϕ and $\phi_\mathtt{c}$ factor through A_K. The composite map

$$A_\mu \simeq A_\mu^{\vee\vee} = (A_{\mu^\mathtt{c}})^\vee \xrightarrow{\phi_\mathtt{c}^\vee} A_K^\vee \xrightarrow{\theta_K} A_K \xrightarrow{\phi} A_\mu$$

belongs to $\mathrm{End}_E(A_\mu)_\mathbb{Q} = i_\mu(M_\mu)$. Now we define

$$(\phi, \phi_\mathtt{c})_\mu^K \coloneqq \mathrm{vol}(K) \cdot i_\mu^{-1}(\phi \circ \theta_K \circ \phi_\mathtt{c}^\vee) \in M_\mu.$$

For sufficiently small K and $K' \subseteq K$, the degree of the transition morphism $u_K^{K'}$ equals $\mathrm{vol}(K) \cdot \mathrm{vol}(K')^{-1}$ by Lemma 4.23(2). Thus, by Lemma 4.23(2) and Proposition 2.7, we know that $(\phi, \phi_\mathtt{c})_\mu^K$ does not depend on the choice of K, which we define as $(\phi, \phi_\mathtt{c})_\mu$. It is clear from the construction that (4.3) is bilinear, independent of the choice of D_μ, non-degenerate since θ_K is a polarization for every K, and $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$-invariant since $\{D_K\}_K$ is functorial under Hecke translations.

4.3. Construction of Fourier–Jacobi cycles

Let $\mathbf{V}$ be a totally definite incoherent hermitian space over $\mathbf{A}_E$ of rank $n \geqslant 2$, with $\mathbf{G} := \mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})$. From now on to the end of Section 5, we

- fix a conjugate symplectic automorphic character $\mu\colon E^\times\backslash\mathbf{A}_E^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ of weight one, and
- will only consider sufficiently small open compact subgroups $K \subseteq \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ that are decomposable, that is, K can be written as $\prod_v K_v$ when v runs over all nonarchimedean places of F; we call such K a *level subgroup*.

Let R be a ring containing $\mathbb{Q}$. Let

$$\mathscr{H}_R := \mathscr{C}_c^\infty(\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty), R)$$

be the full Hecke algebra with coefficients in R, whose multiplication is given by the convolution with respect to the canonical volume (Definition 4.22(3)). It is known that $\mathscr{H}_R$ is an $R[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty) \times \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-module via left and right translations. For $g \in \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$, we denote by L_g and R_g the left and right translations on $\mathscr{H}_R$, respectively.

For a level subgroup $K \subseteq \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$, we have the Hecke (sub)algebra $\mathscr{H}_{K,R} := \mathscr{C}_c^\infty(K\backslash\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)/K, R)$, which admits an R-linear map

$$\mathtt{T}_K\colon \mathscr{H}_{K,R} \to \mathrm{Z}^{n-1}(X_K \times X_K)_R$$

sending f to the Hecke correspondence $\mathtt{T}_K^f$, normalized by $\mathrm{vol}(K)$. For example, if $f = \mathbb{1}_K$, then $\mathtt{T}_K^f = \mathrm{vol}(K)\cdot\Delta X_K \in \mathrm{Z}^{n-1}(X_K \times X_K)_R$. The induced map (with the same notation)

$$\mathtt{T}_K\colon \mathscr{H}_{K,R} \to \mathrm{CH}^{n-1}(X_K \times X_K)_R$$

is a homomorphism of R-algebras. It is clear that $\mathscr{H}_R = \varinjlim_K \mathscr{H}_{K,R}$.

Definition 4.24. Let Π be a relevant representation of $\mathrm{GL}_n(\mathbf{A}_E)$ (Definition 1.2). We define Φ_Π to be the set of isomorphism classes of pairs $(\mathbf{V}, \pi^\infty)$, where

- $\mathbf{V}$ is a totally positive definition incoherent hermitian space over $\mathbf{A}_E$ of rank n,
- π^∞ is an irreducible admissible representation of $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ such that
  - for a nonarchimedean place v of F either split in E or at which π_v^∞ is unramified, we have $\mathrm{BC}(\pi_v^\infty) \simeq \Pi_v$,

– π^∞ appears in $\mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V}),\mathbb{C})$ as a subquotient representation of $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ for some $i\in\mathbb{Z}$ and some place $\tau'\colon E\to\mathbb{C}$.

Proposition 4.25. *Let Π be a relevant representation of $\mathrm{GL}_n(\mathbf{A}_E)$. For $(\mathbf{V},\pi^\infty)\in\Phi_\Pi$, we have for every $\tau'\colon E\to\mathbb{C}$ that*

(1) π^∞ appears in $\mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V}),\mathbb{C})$ semisimply for every i,
(2) π^∞ does not appear in $\mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V}),\mathbb{C})$ if $i\neq n-1$,
(3) $\mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V}),\mathbb{C})[\pi^\infty]=\mathrm{IH}^i_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V}),\mathbb{C})[\pi^\infty]$ for every i.

Proof. Put $\tau\coloneqq\tau'\mid F$, and fix a hermitian space V that is τ-nearby to $\mathbf{V}$ (Definition C.4). Put $\mathrm{G}\coloneqq\mathrm{Res}_{F/\mathbb{Q}}\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})$, and identify $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})\otimes_{E,\tau'}\tau'(E)$ with the (compactified) Shimura variety $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})$ under the notation in Subsection C.1.

We first note that π^∞ is not a constituent of the quotient representation $\mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{B}}(\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'}),\mathbb{C})/\,\mathrm{IH}^i_{\mathrm{B}}(\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'}),\mathbb{C})$, since otherwise Π will have two isomorphic cuspidal factors under Definition 1.2(1), which can not happen by Definition 1.2(2). Then (1) and (3) follow by the discussion in Subsection D.2.

If π^∞ appears in $\mathrm{IH}^i_{\mathrm{B}}(\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'}),\mathbb{C})$, then there is an automorphic representation $\pi_\infty\otimes\pi^\infty$ of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A})$ with $m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi_\infty\otimes\pi^\infty)\geqslant 1$ such that $\mathrm{H}^i(\mathfrak{g},\mathrm{K}_{\mathrm{G}};\pi_\infty)\neq\{0\}$. By [Car12, Theorem 1.2], we know that Π is everywhere tempered. By Arthur's endoscopic classification [Art13], which has been worked out in [Mok15] and [KMSW] for tempered representations for unitary groups, we know that the local base change of π_∞ must be Π_∞, which implies that π_∞ is a discrete series representation. In particular, i has to be the middle degree $n-1$. Thus, (2) follows. □

Definition 4.26. Let Π and $(\mathbf{V},\pi^\infty)$ be as in Proposition 4.25. Let $K\subseteq\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ be a level subgroup. We say that a function $f\in\mathscr{H}_{K,\mathbb{L}}$, where $\mathbb{L}$ is some subfield of $\mathbb{C}$, is a *test function for* π^∞, if the element

$$\mathrm{cl}_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\mathtt{T}^f_K)\in\mathrm{H}^{2n-2}_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K\times\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K,\mathbb{C})$$

belongs to the subspace

$$\mathrm{H}^{n-1}_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K,\mathbb{C})[(\pi^\infty)^K]\otimes_{\mathbb{C}}\mathrm{H}^{n-1}_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K,\mathbb{C})[((\pi^\infty)^\vee)^K]$$

under the Künneth decomposition for every $\tau'\colon E\to\mathbb{C}$.

Now we start to construct the Fourier–Jacobi cycles. We fix two relevant representations Π_1 and Π_2 of $\mathrm{GL}_n(\mathbf{A}_E)$, and consider pairs $(\mathbf{V},\pi_i^\infty)\in\Phi_{\Pi_i}$

for $i = 1, 2$ with the same $\mathbf{V}$. Let $\mathbb{L} \subseteq \mathbb{C}$ be a subfield containing M_μ over which Π_1^∞ and Π_2^∞ (hence π_1^∞ and π_2^∞) are both defined. In what follows, we will regard π_1^∞ and π_2^∞ as irreducible $\mathbb{L}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-modules. Take a CM data $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu) \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$.

Let $K \subseteq \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ be a level subgroup; and we now write X_K for $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K$ as in Subsection 4.2.

Step 1: We start from the cycle

$$\Delta^3 X_K \times D_K^{n-1} \in \mathrm{CH}^{3(n-1)}(X_K \times X_K \times X_K \times X_K)_{\mathbb{Q}},$$

where we recall that D_K is the Hodge divisor on X_K (Definition 4.22(1)). Put

$$(\Delta^3 X_K \times D_K^{n-1})^\nabla \coloneqq \Delta^3 X_K \times D_K^{n-1} \cap X_K \times X_K \times \nabla X_K$$

as an element in $\mathrm{CH}^{3(n-1)}(X_K \times X_K \times \nabla X_K)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ (see Definition 2.1 for the meaning of ∇).

Step 2: Choose an element $\phi \in \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu)$. We push the above cycle along the morphism

$$\mathrm{id}_{X_K \times X_K} \times (\phi \circ \alpha_K) \colon X_K \times X_K \times \nabla X_K \to X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu$$

to obtain a cycle

$$\begin{aligned}(\mathrm{id}_{X_K \times X_K} \times (\phi \circ \alpha_K))_*(\Delta^3 X_K \times D_K^{n-1})^\nabla \\ \in \mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)_{\mathbb{Q}},\end{aligned}$$

where we recall that α_K is the Albanese morphism (4.1).

Step 3: To proceed, we need to homologically trivialize the cycle in Step 2. Heuristically, the Chow group $\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)^0_{\mathbb{Q}}$ should be encoded in the "motive" $\mathrm{H}^{2(n-1)+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]-1}(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)$. The motive we study comes from the product $\Pi_1 \times \Pi_2 \otimes \mu$, which appears in $\mathrm{H}^{n-1}(X_K) \otimes \mathrm{H}^{n-1}(X_K) \otimes \mathrm{H}^{[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]-1}(A_\mu)$ as a direct summand of the previous cohomology by a suitable Künneth decomposition. To make sense of it, we need to introduce certain correspondences serving as projectors to the correct piece of cohomology. For the factor A_μ, we use the canonical projector $\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}}$ in Definition 4.9. For Shimura varieties, we choose test functions f_1 and f_2 in $\mathscr{H}_{K,\mathbb{L}}$ for π_1^∞ and π_2^∞ (Definition 4.26), respectively. Put

$\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K$

$$:= |\pi_0((X_K)_{E^{\mathrm{ac}}})| \cdot (\mathtt{T}_K^{f_1} \otimes \mathtt{T}_K^{f_2} \otimes \mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}})^*(\mathrm{id}_{X_K\times X_K} \times (\phi\circ\alpha_K))_*(\Delta^3 X_K \times D_K^{n-1})^\nabla$$

as an element in $\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)_{\mathbb{L}}$.

For $i \in \mathbb{Z}$, we denote by $\mathrm{CH}^i(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}}[i_\mu]$ the subspace of $\mathrm{CH}^i(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}}$ on which $i_\mu(M_\mu)$ acts via the inclusion $M_\mu \hookrightarrow \mathbb{L}$.

Proposition 4.27. *Let the notation be as above.*

(1) The cycle $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K$ *belongs to* $\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)^0_{\mathbb{L}}$.
(2) The image of $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K$ *in* $\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}}$ *belongs to the subspace* $\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K\times X_K\times A_\mu)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}}[i_\mu]$ *and depends only on the homological equivalence class of* $\mathtt{T}_K^{f_1} \otimes \mathtt{T}_K^{f_2}$.

Proof. Take an embedding $\tau' \colon E \to \mathbb{C}$.

For (1), we realize that the image of $\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\mathtt{T}_K^{f_i})$ for $i = 1, 2$ is contained in $\mathrm{H}^{n-1}_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(X_K, \mathbb{C})$, while, by Lemma 4.10, the image of $\mathrm{cl}^*_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}})$ is contained in $\bigoplus_{i\leqslant[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]-1} \mathrm{H}^i_{\mathrm{B},\tau'}(A_\mu, \mathbb{C})$. Thus, $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K$ is homologically trivial.

For (2), by construction, it is clear that the image of $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K$ belongs to $\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}}[i_\mu]$. For the other part, we pick another pair of test functions (f_1', f_2') such that $\mathtt{T}_K^{f_1'} \otimes \mathtt{T}_K^{f_2'}$ is homologically equivalent to $\mathtt{T}_K^{f_1}\otimes\mathtt{T}_K^{f_2}$. By (1), it suffices to show that for every rational prime ℓ and every isomorphism $\iota_\ell \colon \mathbb{C} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$, the pullbacks $(\mathtt{T}_K^{f_1} \otimes \mathtt{T}_K^{f_2} \otimes \mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}})^*$ and $(\mathtt{T}_K^{f_1'}\otimes\mathtt{T}_K^{f_2'}\otimes\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}})^*$ induce the same map from $\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K\times X_K\times A_\mu)_{\mathbb{L}}$ to

(4.4)
$$\mathrm{H}^1(E, \mathrm{H}^{2(n-1)+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]-1}_{\text{ét}}((X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)_{E^{\mathrm{ac}}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}(n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2))) \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}},\iota_\ell^{-1}} \mathbb{C}.$$

We denote the difference by ζ_ℓ. Again, since $\mathtt{T}_K^{f_1}\otimes\mathtt{T}_K^{f_2}\otimes\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}}$ and $\mathtt{T}_K^{f_1'}\otimes\mathtt{T}_K^{f_2'}\otimes\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}}$ are homologically equivalent, the kernel of ζ_ℓ contains $\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)^0_{\mathbb{L}}$. Thus, ζ_ℓ induces a complex linear map from

(4.5)
$$\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)_{\mathbb{C}} / \mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)^0_{\mathbb{C}}$$

to (4.4). We now explain that such map must be zero.

In fact, let Σ be a finite set of places of F such that for $v \notin \Sigma$, K_v is hyperspecial maximal. Let $\mathscr{H}^{\Sigma}_{K,\mathbb{C}}$ be the partial Hecke algebra away from Σ. Then $\mathscr{H}^{\Sigma}_{K,\mathbb{C}} \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \mathscr{H}^{\Sigma}_{K,\mathbb{C}}$ acts on both (4.4) and (4.5) via the factor $X_K \times X_K$, under which ζ_ℓ is equivariant. In other words, ζ_ℓ is a map of $\mathscr{H}^{\Sigma}_{K,\mathbb{C}} \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \mathscr{H}^{\Sigma}_{K,\mathbb{C}}$-modules. Since f_1 and f_2 are test functions for π_1^∞ and π_2^∞, respectively, the image of ζ_ℓ is isomorphic to a finite copy of $(\pi_1^{\infty,\Sigma})^{K^\Sigma} \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} (\pi_2^{\infty,\Sigma})^{K^\Sigma}$ as an $\mathscr{H}^{\Sigma}_{K,\mathbb{C}} \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \mathscr{H}^{\Sigma}_{K,\mathbb{C}}$-module. Therefore, by Proposition 4.25(2), ζ_ℓ must factor through the image of the cycle class map from (4.5) to

$$\left(\mathrm{H}^{2(n-1)}_{\text{ét}}((X_K \times X_K)_{E^{\mathrm{ac}}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}(n-1)) \otimes \mathrm{H}^{[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]}_{\text{ét}}((A_\mu)_{E^{\mathrm{ac}}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}([M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2))\right) \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}, \iota_\ell^{-1}} \mathbb{C}.$$

However, ζ_ℓ also commutes with the action of M_μ through the factor A_μ by the functoriality of $\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_\mu$. As the actions of $\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}[M_\mu]$ on $\mathrm{H}^{[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]}_{\text{ét}}((A_\mu)_{E^{\mathrm{ac}}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})$ and $\mathrm{H}^{[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]-1}_{\text{ét}}((A_\mu)_{E^{\mathrm{ac}}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})$ have disjoint support, we conclude that ζ_ℓ must be zero. $\square$

Definition 4.28 (Fourier–Jacobi cycles)**.** We call $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K$ a *Fourier–Jacobi cycle* for $\Pi_1 \times \Pi_2 \otimes \mu$. We call the image of $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K$ in $\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}}[i_\mu]$, denoted by $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)^\natural_K$, a *natural Fourier–Jacobi cycle* for $\Pi_1 \times \Pi_2 \otimes \mu$.

The following lemma states that Fourier–Jacobi cycles are compatible with changing level subgroups.

Lemma 4.29. *We have*

(1) Let $K' \subseteq K$ be a smaller level subgroup. Then we have

$$(u_K^{K'} \times u_K^{K'} \times \mathrm{id}_{A_\mu})^* \,\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K = \mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_{K'}.$$

(2) For $g \in \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$, we have

$$(\mathtt{T}_g \times \mathtt{T}_g \times \mathrm{id}_{A_\mu})^* \,\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K = \mathrm{FJ}(\mathrm{R}_g\mathrm{L}_g f_1, \mathrm{R}_g\mathrm{L}_g f_2; g\phi)_{gKg^{-1}},$$

where $\mathtt{T}_g \colon X_{gKg^{-1}} \to X_K$ is the Hecke translation.

Proof. For (1), put $u \coloneqq u_K^{K'} \colon X_{K'} \to X_K$ for short. Note that by definition, we have

$$(u \times u)^* \mathtt{T}_K^{f_i} = \frac{\mathrm{vol}(K)}{\mathrm{vol}(K')} \cdot \mathtt{T}_{K'}^{f_i}$$

for $i = 1, 2$. Thus, for every $\alpha \in \mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_{K'} \times X_{K'} \times A_\mu)_{\mathbb{Q}}$, we have

$$\begin{aligned}&(\mathtt{T}^{f_1}_{K'} \otimes \mathtt{T}^{f_2}_{K'} \otimes \mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_\mu)^*\alpha \\ &\quad= \left(\frac{\mathrm{vol}(K')}{\mathrm{vol}(K)}\right)^2 \cdot (u \times u \times \mathrm{id}_{A_\mu})^*(\mathtt{T}^{f_1}_{K} \otimes \mathtt{T}^{f_2}_{K} \otimes \mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_\mu)^*(u \times u \times \mathrm{id}_{A_\mu})_*\alpha\end{aligned}$$

by a standard computation of correspondences. Therefore, it suffices to show that

$$\begin{aligned}&(u \times u \times \mathrm{id}_{A_\mu})_*(\mathrm{id}_{X_{K'} \times X_{K'}} \times (\phi \circ \alpha_{K'}))_*(\Delta^3 X_{K'} \times D^{n-1}_{K'})^{\nabla} \\ &\quad= \frac{\mathrm{vol}(K)}{\mathrm{vol}(K')} \cdot \frac{\deg D^{n-1}_{K'}}{\deg D^{n-1}_{K}} \cdot (\mathrm{id}_{X_K \times X_K} \times (\phi \circ \alpha_K))_*(\Delta^3 X_K \times D^{n-1}_K)^{\nabla}.\end{aligned}$$

This is an easy consequence of the equality $\alpha_K \circ \nabla u = \alpha_{K'}$. Thus, (1) follows.

Part (2) follows from the same argument for (1), together with the relations $\mathtt{T}^*_g f_i = \mathrm{R}_g \mathrm{L}_g f_i$ for $i = 1, 2$, $\phi \circ \mathrm{Alb}_{\mathtt{T}_g} = g\phi$, and $|\pi_0((X_K)_{E^{\mathrm{ac}}})| = |\pi_0((X_{gKg^{-1}})_{E^{\mathrm{ac}}})|$. □

For $i \in \mathbb{Z}$, put

$$\mathrm{CH}^i(X_\infty \times X_\infty \times A_\mu)^?_{\mathbb{L}} := \varinjlim_{K} \mathrm{CH}^i(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)^?_{\mathbb{L}}$$

for $? = 0, \natural$. The above lemma implies that we have well-defined elements

$$\begin{aligned}\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi) &\in \mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_\infty \times X_\infty \times A_\mu)^0_{\mathbb{L}}, \\ \mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)^\natural &\in \mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_\infty \times X_\infty \times A_\mu)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}}[i_\mu].\end{aligned}$$

Lemma 4.30. *For every elements $g, g_1, g_2 \in \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty_F)$, we have*

$$\begin{aligned}\mathrm{FJ}(\mathrm{R}_{g_1} f_1, \mathrm{R}_{g_2} f_2; \phi) &= (\mathtt{T}_{g_1} \times \mathtt{T}_{g_2} \times \mathrm{id}_{A_\mu})^* \,\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi), \\ \mathrm{FJ}(\mathrm{L}_g f_1, \mathrm{L}_g f_2; g\phi) &= \mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi),\end{aligned}$$

where $\mathtt{T}_g\colon X_\infty \to X_\infty$ denotes the Hecke translation by g.

Proof. The first equality is obvious. For the second one, we have

$$\mathrm{FJ}(\mathrm{R}_g\mathrm{L}_g f_1, \mathrm{R}_g\mathrm{L}_g f_2; g\phi) = (\mathtt{T}_g \times \mathtt{T}_g \times \mathrm{id}_{A_\mu})^* \,\mathrm{FJ}(\mathrm{L}_g f_1, \mathrm{L}_g f_2; g\phi)$$

from the first one. Thus,

$$\mathrm{FJ}(\mathrm{L}_g f_1, \mathrm{L}_g f_2; g\phi) = (\mathtt{T}_{g^{-1}} \times \mathtt{T}_{g^{-1}} \times \mathrm{id}_{A_\mu})^* \,\mathrm{FJ}(\mathrm{R}_g\mathrm{L}_g f_1, \mathrm{R}_g\mathrm{L}_g f_2; g\phi)$$

$$= (\mathtt{T}_{g^{-1}} \times \mathtt{T}_{g^{-1}} \times \mathrm{id}_{A_\mu})^* (\mathtt{T}_g \times \mathtt{T}_g \times \mathrm{id}_{A_\mu})^* \, \mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)$$
$$= \mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi),$$

in which the second equality is due to Lemma 4.29(2). □

4.4. Arithmetic Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture

We first summarize the construction of the natural Fourier–Jacobi cycles in a more functorial way. Let Π_1, Π_2, $(\mathbf{V}, \pi_1^\infty)$, $(\mathbf{V}, \pi_2^\infty)$, and $\mathbb{L}$ be as in the previous subsection.

Similar to Definition 4.16, for $i \in \mathbb{Z}$, we put

$$\mathrm{CH}^i_\mu(X_\infty \times X_\infty)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}} \coloneqq \varinjlim_{D_\mu=(A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu)\in\mathcal{A}(\mu)} \mathrm{CH}^i(X_\infty \times X_\infty \times A_\mu)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}}[i_\mu] \tag{4.6}$$

in the category of $\mathbb{L}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty) \times \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-modules. It follows from Proposition 4.6(1) that the canonical map $\mathrm{CH}^i(X_\infty \times X_\infty \times A_\mu)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}}[i_\mu] \to \mathrm{CH}^i_\mu(X_\infty \times X_\infty)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}}$ from (4.6) is an isomorphism for every object $D_\mu \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$, similar to Remark 4.17.

Then it is clear that the assignment $(f_1, f_2, \phi) \mapsto \mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2, \phi)^\natural$ defines an $\mathbb{L}$-linear map

$$\mathrm{FJ}^\natural \colon \mathscr{H}_{\mathbb{L}} \otimes_{\mathbb{L}} \mathscr{H}_{\mathbb{L}} \otimes_{M_\mu} \Omega(\mu) \to \mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}_\mu(X_\infty \times X_\infty)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}},$$

which is independent of the choice of $D_\mu \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$.

The Hecke actions induce canonical surjective maps

$$\mathscr{H}_{\mathbb{L}} \to \pi_i^\infty \otimes_{\mathbb{L}} (\pi_i^\infty)^\vee \tag{4.7}$$

of $\mathbb{L}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty) \times \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]$-modules for $i = 1, 2$. Proposition 4.27(2) implies that $\mathrm{FJ}^\natural$ factors through the quotient

$$\left(\pi_1^\infty \otimes_{\mathbb{L}} (\pi_1^\infty)^\vee\right) \otimes_{\mathbb{L}} \left(\pi_2^\infty \otimes_{\mathbb{L}} (\pi_2^\infty)^\vee\right) \otimes_{M_\mu} \Omega(\mu).$$

Together with Lemma 4.30, we conclude that $\mathrm{FJ}^\natural$ is actually an $\mathbb{L}$-linear map

$$\mathrm{FJ}^\natural \colon \pi_1^\infty \otimes_{\mathbb{L}} \pi_2^\infty \otimes_{M_\mu} \Omega(\mu)$$
$$\to \mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{L}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)\times\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]}\left((\pi_1^\infty)^\vee \otimes_{\mathbb{L}} (\pi_2^\infty)^\vee, \mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}_\mu(X_\infty \times X_\infty)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}}\right),$$

which is invariant under the diagonal action of $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ on the left-hand side. For every μ-admissible collection ε (Definition 4.12), we denote by

$$\begin{aligned}&\mathrm{FJ}^\natural_\varepsilon\colon \pi_1^\infty\otimes_{\mathbb{L}}\pi_2^\infty\otimes_{M_\mu}\Omega(\mu,\varepsilon)\\&\to \mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{L}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)\times\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]}\left((\pi_1^\infty)^\vee\otimes_{\mathbb{L}}(\pi_2^\infty)^\vee,\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}_\mu(X_\infty\times X_\infty)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}}\right)\end{aligned}$$

the restriction of $\mathrm{FJ}^\natural$ to $\pi_1^\infty\otimes_{\mathbb{L}}\pi_2^\infty\otimes_{M_\mu}\Omega(\mu,\varepsilon)$ (Definition 4.19).

Conjecture 4.31 (Unrefined arithmetic Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture for $\mathrm{U}(n)\times\mathrm{U}(n)$)**.** *Let Π_1 and Π_2 be two relevant representations of $\mathrm{GL}_n(\mathbf{A}_E)$ (Definition 1.2). Let $\mu\colon E^\times\backslash\mathbf{A}_E^\times\to\mathbb{C}^\times$ be a conjugate symplectic automorphic character of weight one, and ε a μ-admissible collection. Let $\mathbb{L}\subseteq\mathbb{C}$ be a subfield containing M_μ over which both Π_1^∞ and Π_2^∞ are defined. For pairs $(\mathbf{V},\pi_1^\infty)\in\Phi_{\Pi_1}$ and $(\mathbf{V},\pi_2^\infty)\in\Phi_{\Pi_2}$, the following three statements are equivalent:*

(a) We have $\mathrm{FJ}^\natural_\varepsilon\neq 0$.
(b) We have $\mathrm{FJ}^\natural_\varepsilon\neq 0$, and that

$$\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{L}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)\times\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]}\left((\pi_1^\infty)^\vee\otimes_{\mathbb{L}}(\pi_2^\infty)^\vee,\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}_\mu(X_\infty\times X_\infty)^\natural_{\mathbb{L}}\right)$$

has dimension 1.
(c) We have $L'(\frac{1}{2},\Pi_1\times\Pi_2\otimes\mu)\neq 0$, and that

$$\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{L}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]}(\pi_1^\infty\otimes_{\mathbb{L}}\pi_2^\infty\otimes_{M_\mu}\Omega(\mu,\varepsilon),\mathbb{L})$$

is nonzero.

Remark 4.32. We have the following remarks concerning Conjecture 4.31.

(1) The equivalence between (a) and (b) can be regarded as a generalization of Kolyvagin's theorem for Heegner points.
(2) The assertion $\mathrm{FJ}^\natural_\varepsilon\neq 0$ immediately implies

$$\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{L}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]}(\pi_1^\infty\otimes_{\mathbb{L}}\pi_2^\infty\otimes_{M_\mu}\Omega(\mu,\varepsilon),\mathbb{L})\neq\{0\}.$$

(3) By the multiplicity one part of the local Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture, which is proved in [Sun12] for our particular Fourier–Jacobi model, we know that

$$\dim_{\mathbb{L}}\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{L}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]}(\pi_1^\infty\otimes_{\mathbb{L}}\pi_2^\infty\otimes_{M_\mu}\Omega(\mu,\varepsilon),\mathbb{L})\leqslant 1.$$

(4) By the (refined) local Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture, which is proved in [GI16] for our particular Fourier–Jacobi model, we know that if

$$\dim_{\mathbb{L}} \mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{L}[\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)]}(\pi_1^\infty \otimes_{\mathbb{L}} \pi_2^\infty \otimes_{M_\mu} \Omega(\mu,\varepsilon), \mathbb{L}) = 1 \tag{4.8}$$

from some μ-admissible collection ε, then the global root number of $\Pi_1 \times \Pi_2 \otimes \mu$ is -1, that is, $L(s, \Pi_1 \times \Pi_2 \otimes \mu)$ has odd vanishing order at the center $s = \frac{1}{2}$. Moreover, we have

- If n is even, then the triple $(\mathbf{V}, \pi_1^\infty, \pi_2^\infty)$ is uniquely determined; but ε could be an arbitrary μ-admissible collection.
- If n is odd, then $\mathbf{V}$ could be arbitrary; but once $\mathbf{V}$ is chosen, π_1^∞, π_2^∞, and ε are uniquely determined.

In other words, in both cases, once ε is given, the triple $(\mathbf{V}, \pi_1^\infty, \pi_2^\infty)$ is uniquely determined.

Now we state a refined version of the arithmetic Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$. We assume that all height pairings are defined. Take a level subgroup $K \subseteq \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$. For every object $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu) \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$ and every μ-admissible collection ε, put

$$\mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu, \varepsilon) \coloneqq \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu) \cap \Omega(\mu, \varepsilon),$$
$$\mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu^\vee, -\varepsilon) \coloneqq \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu^\vee) \cap \Omega(\mu^{\mathsf{c}}, -\varepsilon).$$

Conjecture 4.33 (Refined arithmetic Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$)**.** *Let the setup be as in Conjecture 4.31. Moreover, let $K \subseteq \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ be a level subgroup, and $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu) \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$ a CM data for μ (Definition 4.5). For every test functions $f_1, f_1^\vee, f_2, f_2^\vee \in \mathscr{H}_{K,\mathbb{L}}$ for π_1^∞, $(\pi_1^\infty)^\vee$, π_2^∞, $(\pi_2^\infty)^\vee$, respectively, and every elements $\phi \in \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu, \varepsilon)$ and $\phi_{\mathsf{c}} \in \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu^\vee, -\varepsilon)$, the equality*

$$\begin{aligned}\mathrm{vol}(K)^2 \cdot \langle \mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K, \mathrm{FJ}(f_1^\vee, f_2^\vee; \phi_{\mathsf{c}})_K \rangle^{\mathrm{BBP}}_{X_K \times X_{K,A_\mu}} \\ = \frac{\prod_{i=1}^n L(i, \mu_{E/F}^i)}{2^{s(\Pi_1)+s(\Pi_2)}} \cdot \frac{L'(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi_1 \times \Pi_2 \otimes \mu)}{L(1, \Pi_1, \mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n}) \cdot L(1, \Pi_2, \mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n})} \\ \cdot \beta(f_1, f_1^\vee, f_2, f_2^\vee, \phi, \phi_{\mathsf{c}})\end{aligned} \tag{4.9}$$

holds. Here, $s(\Pi_i)$ has appeared in Definition 1.2; $\mathrm{As}^\pm$ *stand for the two Asai representations (see, for example,* [GGP12a, Section 7]*); and β is a certain normalized matrix coefficient integral defined immediately below.*

For $i=1,2$, we have $\mathbb{L}$-linear maps

$$\mathscr{H}_{\mathbb{L}} \to \pi_i^\infty \otimes_{\mathbb{L}} (\pi_i^\infty)^\vee \to \mathbb{L}(\subseteq \mathbb{C}),$$

in which the first is (4.7) and the second is the evaluation map. For every $f \in \mathscr{H}_{\mathbb{L}}$ and $g \in \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$, we denote by $\mathrm{ev}(\pi_i^\infty(g), f)$ the image of $\mathrm{L}_g f$ under the above composite map. In particular, the assignment $g \mapsto \mathrm{ev}(\pi_i^\infty(g), f)$ is a matrix coefficient of π_i^∞.

Consider a finite set Σ of nonarchimedean places of F such that K_v is hyperspecial maximal for $v \notin \Sigma$. Let d_Σ be the unique Haar measure on $\mathbf{G}(F_\Sigma)$ under which the volume of K_Σ equals $2\,\mathrm{vol}(K)$. For $f_1, f_1^\vee, f_2, f_2^\vee \in \mathscr{H}_{\mathbb{L}}$, $\phi \in \Omega(\mu, \varepsilon)$ and $\phi_{\mathsf{c}} \in \Omega(\mu^{\mathsf{c}}, -\varepsilon)$, we define

$$\begin{aligned}
&\beta_\Sigma(f_1, f_1^\vee, f_2, f_2^\vee, \phi, \phi_{\mathsf{c}}) \\
&\quad := \left(\prod_{v \in \Sigma \cup \Phi_F} \frac{\prod_{i=1}^n L(i, \mu^i_{E/F,v}) \cdot L(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi_{1,v} \times \Pi_{2,v} \otimes \mu_v)}{L(1, \Pi_{1,v}, \mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n}) \cdot L(1, \Pi_{2,v}, \mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n})} \right)^{-1} \\
&\qquad \int_{\mathbf{G}(F_\Sigma)} \mathrm{ev}(\pi_1^\infty(g), f_1^{\mathrm{t}} * f_1^\vee) \cdot \mathrm{ev}(\pi_2^\infty(g), f_2^{\mathrm{t}} * f_2^\vee) \cdot (g\phi, \phi_{\mathsf{c}})_\mu \cdot \mathrm{d}_\Sigma g,
\end{aligned}$$

in which

- f_i^{t} is the transpose of f_i, that is, $f_i^{\mathrm{t}}(g) = f_i(g^{-1})$,
- $f_i^{\mathrm{t}} * f_i^\vee$ denotes the convolution product in $\mathscr{H}_{K,\mathbb{L}}$,
- $(\ ,\ )_\mu$ is the pairing (4.3).

By [Xue16, Proposition 1.1.1(1,3)], the value of $\beta_\Sigma(f_1, f_1^\vee, f_2, f_2^\vee, \phi, \phi_{\mathsf{c}})$ is finite and stabilizes when Σ is large enough; and we denote the stable value by $\beta(f_1, f_1^\vee, f_2, f_2^\vee, \phi, \phi_{\mathsf{c}})$.

Remark 4.34. We have the following remarks concerning Conjecture 4.31.

(1) The left-hand side of (4.9) is independent of K. More precisely, if we take a smaller level subgroup K' contained in K, then the left-hand side of (4.9) is equal to

$$\mathrm{vol}(K')^2 \cdot \langle \mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_{K'}, \mathrm{FJ}(f_1^\vee, f_2^\vee; \phi_{\mathsf{c}})_{K'} \rangle^{\mathrm{BBP}}_{X_{K'} \times X_{K'}, A_\mu}$$

by the projection formula.

(2) The refined Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture for the central value formula in this case is formulated by Hang Xue [Xue16, Conjecture 1.1.2].

(3) It is known by [Xue16, Proposition 1.1.1(2)] that (4.8) holds if and only if β is nonvanishing as a functional.

At the end of this subsection, we state a variant of Conjecture 4.33. The following definition (with slightly different terminology) is taken from [RSZ20].

Definition 4.35. We say that a collection of correspondences $z = (z_K \in \mathrm{CH}^{n-1}(X_K \times X_K)_{\mathbb{Q}})_K$ is a *Hecke system of projectors* if

(1) z_K is an odd projector (Definition 3.10) for every K,
(2) we have $(\mathrm{id}_{X_{K'}} \times u_K^{K'})_* z_{K'} = (u_K^{K'} \times \mathrm{id}_{X_K})^* z_K \in \mathrm{CH}^{n-1}(X_{K'} \times X_K)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ for every transition morphism $u_K^{K'} \colon X_{K'} \to X_K$,
(3) for every $g \in \mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$, we have $\mathtt{T}_g^* z_K = z_{gKg^{-1}}$ where $\mathtt{T}_g \colon X_{gKg^{-1}} \to X_K$ is the Hecke translation.

Remark 4.36. We have the following remarks concerning the existence of Hecke system of projectors.

(1) If $n = 2$, then $z = (z_{X_K, D_K})_K$ constructed in Lemma 3.11(1) is a Hecke system of projectors by Lemma 4.23.
(2) If $n = 3$, then $z = (z_{X_K, D_K})_K$ constructed in Lemma 3.11(2) is a Hecke system of projectors by Lemma 4.23 and Proposition 2.12(2).
(3) If $n \geqslant 4$ and $F \neq \mathbb{Q}$, then odd projectors exist by [MS19, Theorem 1.3]. Note that since we consider trivial coefficients, there is no need to require the Shimura data to be of PEL type in that theorem; see [MS19, Remark 2.7].
(4) If $n \geqslant 4$ and $F = \mathbb{Q}$, then one probably needs to use projectors for intersection cohomology; see [MS19, Theorem 1.4].

Now take a Hecke system of projectors $z = (z_K)_K$. We will use z to modify Step 1 in the construction of $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K$. Namely, we consider

$$\Delta_z^3 X_K \coloneqq \mathrm{pr}_{z_K}^{[3]} \Delta^3 X_K \in \mathrm{CH}^{2(n-1)}(X_K \times X_K \times X_K)_{\mathbb{Q}}^0,$$

where $\mathrm{pr}_{z_K}^{[3]}$ is defined in Definition 3.13. Then we replace $\Delta^3 X_K$ by $\Delta_z^3 X_K$ in every later step, and denote the final outcome by

$$\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K^z \in \mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)_{\mathbb{L}}^0.$$

Conjecture 4.37 (Refined arithmetic Gan–Gross–Prasad conjecture for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$, variant)**.** *Let the setup be as in Conjecture 4.33. Take a Hecke system of projectors $z = (z_K)_K$. Then the equality*

$$\mathrm{vol}(K)^2 \cdot \langle \mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K^z, \mathrm{FJ}(f_1^\vee, f_2^\vee; \phi_{\mathsf{c}})_K^z \rangle_{X_K \times X_K, A_\mu}^{\mathrm{BBP}} \tag{4.10}$$

$$= \frac{\prod_{i=1}^{n} L(i, \mu_{E/F}^{i})}{2^{s(\Pi_1)+s(\Pi_2)}} \cdot \frac{L'(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi_1 \times \Pi_2 \otimes \mu)}{L(1, \Pi_1, \mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n}) \cdot L(1, \Pi_2, \mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n})}$$
$$\cdot \beta(f_1, f_1^\vee, f_2, f_2^\vee, \phi, \phi_{\mathsf{c}})$$

holds.

Remark 4.38. We have the following remarks concerning Conjecture 4.37.

(1) We have a similar statement for $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K^z$ as in Lemma 4.29. In particular, the left-hand side of (4.10) is independent of K.
(2) By a similar argument for Proposition 4.27(2), one can show that the image of $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K^z$ in $\mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X_K \times X_K \times A_\mu)_{\mathbb{L}}^\natural$ equals $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)_K^\natural$. This is why we expect the variant conjecture to hold as well, in view of Remark 3.2.
(3) One of the advantages of introducing the auxiliary projector z is that one can show that the left-hand side of (4.10), regarded as a functional in $(\phi, \phi_{\mathsf{c}})$, factors through the map

$$\mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu, \varepsilon) \times \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu^\vee, -\varepsilon) \to \Omega(\mu, \varepsilon) \otimes_{M_\mu} \Omega(\mu^{\mathsf{c}}, -\varepsilon)$$

and becomes M_μ-linear. See Remark 5.11.

5. Arithmetic relative trace formula

In this section, we discuss a relative trace formula approach toward the arithmetic GGP conjecture for $\mathrm{U}(n) \times \mathrm{U}(n)$. In Subsection 5.1, we prove the doubling formula for CM data. In Subsection 5.2, we introduce the global arithmetic invariant functional and its local version at good inert primes for which we perform some preliminary computation. In Subsection 5.3, we prove the formula for the orbital decomposition of the local arithmetic invariant functional.

We keep the notation from Section 4. We fix a conjugate symplectic automorphic character $\mu\colon E^\times \backslash \mathbf{A}_E^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ of weight one, and a μ-admissible collection ε (Definition 4.12).

From now on, we will restrict ourselves to the Compact Case. We will identify E as a *subfield* of $\mathbb{C}$ via a fixed complex embedding $\tau' \in \Phi_\mu$. Put $\tau \coloneqq \tau' \mid F$, and fix a hermitian space V that is τ-nearby to $\mathbf{V}$ (Definition C.4). In particular, V is anisotropic. Put $\mathrm{G} \coloneqq \mathrm{Res}_{F/\mathbb{Q}} \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})$, and identify X_K with the (proper) Shimura variety $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_K$ under the notation in Remark C.2.

5.1. A doubling formula for CM data

We start by performing some preliminary computation of the Beilinson–Bloch–Poincaré height pairing

$$\mathrm{vol}(K)^2 \cdot \langle \mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)^z_K, \mathrm{FJ}(f_1^\vee, f_2^\vee; \phi_{\mathsf{c}})^z_K \rangle^{\mathrm{BBP}}_{X_K \times X_K, A_\mu} \tag{5.1}$$

for a level subgroup $K \subseteq \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$ and a CM data $D_\mu = (A_\mu, i_\mu, \lambda_\mu, r_\mu) \in \mathcal{A}(\mu)$, as in Conjecture 4.37.

Consider an intermediate number field $E \subseteq E' \subseteq \mathbb{C}$ such that E' splits X_K (Definition 2.1). Put $X'_K := (X_K)_{E'}$, $A'_K := (A_K)_{E'}$, $A'_\mu := (A_\mu)_{E'}$, $\phi' := \phi_{E'}$, and $\phi'_{\mathsf{c}} := (\phi_{\mathsf{c}})_{E'}$. We will suppress E' in the fiber product $X \times_{E'} Y$ of schemes if X and Y are obviously over E'. For every element $P \in X_K(\pi_0(X'_K))$, we have the induced morphism

$$\alpha_P := (\alpha_K)_P \colon X'_K \to A'_K$$

from Definition 2.3 and Definition 2.1. We put

$$\begin{aligned}
\Delta^{\phi,P}_z X_K &:= (\mathrm{id}_{X'_K \times X'_K} \times (\phi' \circ \alpha_P))_* \Delta^3_z X_K \\
&\in \mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X'_K \times X'_K \times A'_\mu)^0_{\mathbb{Q}}, \\
\Delta^{\phi_{\mathsf{c}},P}_z X_K &:= (\mathrm{id}_{X'_K \times X'_K} \times (\phi'_{\mathsf{c}} \circ \alpha_P))_* \Delta^3_z X_K \\
&\in \mathrm{CH}^{n-1+[M_\mu:\mathbb{Q}]/2}(X'_K \times X'_K \times A'^\vee_\mu)^0_{\mathbb{Q}}.
\end{aligned}$$

Lemma 5.1. *Suppose that E' is sufficiently large such that D^{n-1}_K can be represented by a finite sum $\sum_i c_i P_i$ with $c_i \in \mathbb{Q}$ and $P_i \in X_K(\pi_0(X'_K))$. Then we have*

$$\begin{aligned}
(5.1) = &\frac{1}{[E':E](\deg D^{n-1}_K)^2} \sum_{i,j} c_i c_j \\
&\cdot \langle (\mathtt{T}^{f_1}_K \otimes \mathtt{T}^{f_2}_K \otimes \mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_\mu)^* \Delta^{\phi,P_i}_z X_K, (\mathtt{T}^{f_1^\vee}_K \otimes \mathtt{T}^{f_2^\vee}_K \otimes \mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_{\mu^{\mathtt{c}}})^* \Delta^{\phi_{\mathsf{c}},P_j}_z X_K \rangle^{\mathrm{BBP}}_{X'_K \times X'_K, A'_\mu}.
\end{aligned}$$

Proof. This follows immediately from the definition of $\mathrm{FJ}(f_1^\vee, f_2^\vee; \phi_{\mathsf{c}})^z_K$ and Definition 4.22(2). □

Let $\mathcal{P}_\mu \in \mathrm{CH}^1(A_\mu \times A^\vee_\mu)$ be the Poincaré class on $A_\mu \times A^\vee_\mu$. Put

$$\mathcal{Q}_\mu := (\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can,t}}_\mu \otimes \mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_{\mu^{\mathtt{c}}})^* \mathcal{P}_\mu \in \mathrm{CH}^1(A_\mu \times A^\vee_\mu)_{M_\mu},$$

and for $P,Q\in X_K(\pi_0(X'_K))$, put

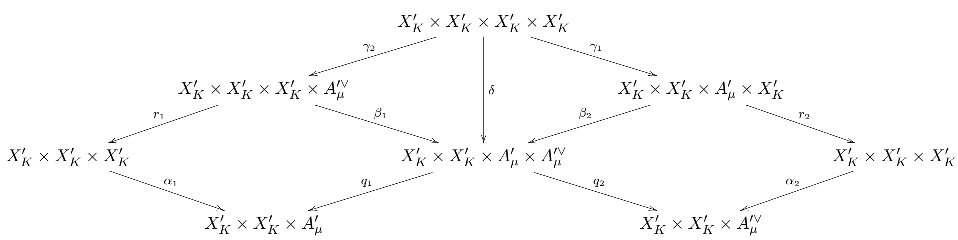
$$\mathcal{Q}^{\phi,\phi_{\mathtt{c}},P,Q}_{\mu,K}\coloneqq(\phi'\circ\alpha_P\times\phi'_{\mathtt{c}}\circ\alpha_Q)^*\mathcal{Q}_\mu\in\mathrm{CH}^1(X'_K\times X'_K)_{M_\mu}.$$

Lemma 5.2. *For $P,Q\in X_K(\pi_0(X'_K))$, we have*

$$\begin{aligned}&\langle(\mathtt{T}^{f_1}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{f_2}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_\mu)^*\Delta^{\phi,P}_zX_K,(\mathtt{T}^{f_1^\vee}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{f_2^\vee}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_{\mu^{\mathtt{c}}})^*\Delta^{\phi_{\mathtt{c}},Q}_zX_K\rangle^{\mathrm{BBP}}_{X'_K\times X'_K,A'_\mu}\\ &=\langle\mathtt{p}^*_{123}\Delta^3_zX_K,(X'_K\times X'_K\times\mathcal{Q}^{\phi,\phi_{\mathtt{c}},P,Q}_{\mu,K}).\mathtt{p}^*_{124}\Delta^3_{z,f_1^{\mathtt{t}}*f_1^\vee,f_2^{\mathtt{t}}*f_2^\vee}X_K\rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{X'_K\times X'_K\times X'_K\times X'_K}\end{aligned}$$

where $\Delta^3_{z,\boldsymbol{f}_1,\boldsymbol{f}_2}X_K\coloneqq(\mathtt{T}^{\boldsymbol{f}_1}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{\boldsymbol{f}_2}_K\otimes\mathrm{id}_{X_K})^*\Delta^3_zX_K\in\mathrm{CH}^{2(n-1)}(X_K\times X_K\times X_K)^0_{\mathbb{L}}$ *for* $\boldsymbol{f}_1,\boldsymbol{f}_2\in\mathscr{H}_{K,\mathbb{L}}$.

Proof. Consider the following commutative diagram of in the category $\mathrm{Sch}_{/E'}$



in which all diamonds are Cartesian, and $\alpha_1\coloneqq\mathrm{id}_{X'_K\times X'_K}\times(\phi'\circ\alpha_P)$, $\alpha_2\coloneqq\mathrm{id}_{X'_K\times X'_K}\times(\phi'_{\mathtt{c}}\circ\alpha_Q)$, $q_1\coloneqq\mathtt{p}_{123}$, $q_2\coloneqq\mathtt{p}_{124}$.

Put $\mathcal{P}'_\mu\coloneqq(X'_K\times X'_K)\times\mathcal{P}_\mu$ and $\mathcal{Q}'_\mu\coloneqq(X'_K\times X'_K)\times\mathcal{Q}_\mu$. By the definition of the Beilinson–Bloch–Poincaré height pairing, we have

$$\begin{aligned}&\langle(\mathtt{T}^{f_1}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{f_2}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_\mu)^*\Delta^{\phi,P}_zX_K,(\mathtt{T}^{f_1^\vee}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{f_2^\vee}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_{\mu^{\mathtt{c}}})^*\Delta^{\phi_{\mathtt{c}},Q}_zX_K\rangle^{\mathrm{BBP}}_{X'_K\times X'_K,A'_\mu}\\ &=\langle(\mathtt{T}^{f_1}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{f_2}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_\mu)^*\Delta^{\phi,P}_zX_K,\\ &\qquad q_{1*}(\mathcal{P}'_\mu.q_2^*(\mathtt{T}^{f_1^\vee}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{f_2^\vee}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_{\mu^{\mathtt{c}}})^*\Delta^{\phi_{\mathtt{c}},Q}_zX_K)\rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{X'_K\times X'_K\times A'_\mu}\\ &=\langle q_1^*(\mathtt{T}^{f_1}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{f_2}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_\mu)^*\Delta^{\phi,P}_zX_K,\\ &\qquad \mathcal{P}'_\mu.q_2^*(\mathtt{T}^{f_1^\vee}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{f_2^\vee}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_{\mu^{\mathtt{c}}})^*\Delta^{\phi_{\mathtt{c}},Q}_zX_K\rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{X'_K\times X'_K\times A'_\mu\times A'^\vee_\mu},\end{aligned}\tag{5.2}$$

where we have used [Beĭ87, 4.0.3] for the last equality. Note that we have

$$\begin{aligned}q_1^*(\mathtt{T}^{f_1}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{f_2}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_\mu)^*\Delta^{\phi,P}_zX_K&=(\mathtt{T}^{f_1}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{f_2}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_\mu\otimes\mathrm{id}_{A'^\vee_\mu})^*q_1^*\Delta^{\phi,P}_zX_K\\ &=(\mathtt{T}^{f_1}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{f_2}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_\mu\otimes\mathrm{id}_{A'^\vee_\mu})^*q_1^*\alpha_{1*}\Delta^3_zX_K\\ &=(\mathtt{T}^{f_1}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{f_2}_K\otimes\mathtt{T}^{\mathrm{can}}_\mu\otimes\mathrm{id}_{A'^\vee_\mu})^*\beta_{1*}r_1^*\Delta^3_zX_K,\end{aligned}$$

and similarly

$$q_2^*(\mathtt{T}_K^{f_1^\vee}\otimes\mathtt{T}_K^{f_2^\vee}\otimes\mathtt{T}_{\mu^c}^{\mathrm{can}})^*\Delta_z^{\phi_c,Q}X_K=(\mathtt{T}_K^{f_1^\vee}\otimes\mathtt{T}_K^{f_2^\vee}\otimes\mathrm{id}_{A'_\mu}\otimes\mathtt{T}_{\mu^c}^{\mathrm{can}})^*\beta_{2*}r_2^*\Delta_z^3X_K.$$

Then it follows that (5.2) equals

$$\langle(\mathtt{T}_\mu^{\mathrm{can}})^*\beta_{1*}r_1^*\Delta^3_{z,f_1,f_2}X_K,\mathcal{P}'_\mu.(\mathtt{T}_{\mu^c}^{\mathrm{can}})^*\beta_{2*}r_2^*\Delta^3_{z,f_1^\vee,f_2^\vee}X_K\rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{X'_K\times X'_K\times A'_\mu\times A'^\vee_\mu}, \tag{5.3}$$

where we have suppressed the expression $\mathrm{id}_?$ in the notation of correspondences as it is clear which factor the correspondence acts on. Using [Beĭ87, 4.0.3] again, we further have

$$\begin{aligned}(5.3)&=\langle\beta_{1*}r_1^*\Delta^3_{z,f_1,f_2}X_K,\mathcal{Q}'_\mu.\beta_{2*}r_2^*\Delta^3_{z,f_1^\vee,f_2^\vee}X_K\rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{X'_K\times X'_K\times A'_\mu\times A'^\vee_\mu}\\&=\langle\gamma_2^*r_1^*\Delta^3_{z,f_1,f_2}X_K,\delta^*\mathcal{Q}'_\mu.\gamma_1^*r_2^*\Delta^3_{z,f_1^\vee,f_2^\vee}X_K\rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{X'_K\times X'_K\times X'_K\times X'_K}\\&=\langle\gamma_2^*r_1^*\Delta^3_zX_K,\delta^*\mathcal{Q}'_\mu.\gamma_1^*r_2^*\Delta^3_{z,f_1^{\mathrm{t}}*f_1^\vee,f_2^{\mathrm{t}}*f_2^\vee}X_K\rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{X'_K\times X'_K\times X'_K\times X'_K}\\&=\langle\mathtt{p}_{123}^*\Delta^3_zX_K,\delta^*\mathcal{Q}'_\mu.\mathtt{p}_{124}^*\Delta^3_{z,f_1^{\mathrm{t}}*f_1^\vee,f_2^{\mathrm{t}}*f_2^\vee}X_K\rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{X'_K\times X'_K\times X'_K\times X'_K}.\end{aligned}$$

The lemma follows by noting that

$$\delta=\beta_2\circ\gamma_1=\beta_1\circ\gamma_2=\mathrm{id}_{X'_K\times X'_K}\times(\phi'\circ\alpha_P)\times(\phi'_{\mathtt{c}}\circ\alpha_Q).\qquad\square$$

Lemma 5.2 suggests us to compute $\mathcal{Q}^{\phi,\phi_c,P,Q}_{\mu,K}\in\mathrm{CH}^1(X'_K\times X'_K)_{M_\mu}$, or rather its homological equivalence class by Lemma 3.5. To do this, we first review the doubling construction and Kudla's generating series of special divisors which was introduced by Kudla [Kud97] in the context of orthogonal Shimura varieties.

Definition 5.3. Let $\mathrm{V}(E)^+\subseteq\mathrm{V}(E)$ be the subset consisting of x such that $(x,x)_{\mathrm{V}}$ is totally positive. Take $x\in\mathrm{V}(E)^+$, and denote its orthogonal complement in V by V^x. For $g\in\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$, we have the composite morphism

$$\mathtt{s}_{x,g}\colon\ \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}^x,\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V}^x,\tau'})_{gKg^{-1}\cap\mathrm{G}^x(\mathbf{A}^\infty)}\to\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_{gKg^{-1}}=X_{gKg^{-1}}\xrightarrow{\mathtt{T}_g}X_K,$$

where $\mathrm{G}^x:=\mathrm{Res}_{F/\mathbb{Q}}\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^x)$, and the first arrow is induced by the inclusion $\mathrm{V}^x\subseteq\mathrm{V}$ of hermitian subspaces. The morphism $\mathtt{s}_{x,g}$ is finite and unramified. We define

$$Z(x,g)_K:=(\mathtt{s}_{x,g})_*\,\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}^x,\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V}^x,\tau'})_{gKg^{-1}\cap\mathrm{G}^x(\mathbf{A}^\infty)}$$

as an element in $\mathrm{Z}^1(X_K)$.

We denote by $\mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty))$ the space of complex valued Schwartz functions on $\mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty)$, which admits an action by $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$ via the variable. For every $\boldsymbol{\phi} \in \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty))$, we define *the generating series of special divisors* attached to $\boldsymbol{\phi}$ (of level K) to be

$$Z(\boldsymbol{\phi})_K \coloneqq -\boldsymbol{\phi}(0)D_K + \sum_{x\in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F)\backslash \mathrm{V}(E)^+} e^{-2\pi\cdot \mathrm{Tr}_{F/\mathbb{Q}}(x,x)_{\mathrm{V}}} \sum_{g\in \mathrm{G}^x(\mathbf{A}^\infty)\backslash \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)/K} \boldsymbol{\phi}(g^{-1}x)Z(x,g)_K$$

as a formal series in $\mathrm{Z}^1(X_K)_\mathbb{C}$, where D_K is (some representative of) the Hodge divisor (Definition 4.22).

Lemma 5.4. *The generating series of special divisors $Z(\boldsymbol{\phi})_K$ is Chow convergent, that is, an element in $\mathrm{CZ}^1(X_K)$ (Definition 3.3).*

Proof. This is [Liu11a, Theorem 3.5(2)] (with $g = 1$), together with the fact that $\mathrm{CH}^1(X_K)_\mathbb{C}$ is of finite dimension. □

We study the relation between generating series of special divisors and the spaces $\Omega(\mu,\varepsilon)$ and $\Omega(\mu^\mathtt{c},-\varepsilon)$. Choose a nonzero element α (resp. $\alpha_\mathtt{c}$) in $\mathrm{H}^0(A_\mu(\mathbb{C}),\Omega^1)$ (resp. $\mathrm{H}^0(A_\mu^\vee(\mathbb{C}),\Omega^1)$) on which M_μ acts via the inclusion $M_\mu \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$, such that under the canonical pairing $\mathrm{H}^1_\mathrm{B}(A_\mu,\mathbb{C}) \times \mathrm{H}^1_\mathrm{B}(A_\mu^\vee,\mathbb{C}) \to \mathbb{C}$, α and $\overline{\alpha_\mathtt{c}}$ pair to one. It is clear that for $\phi \in \Omega(\mu,\varepsilon)$ and $\phi_\mathtt{c} \in \Omega(\mu^\mathtt{c},-\varepsilon)$, the $(1,1)$-form

$$\phi \diamond \phi_\mathtt{c} \coloneqq \phi^*\alpha \wedge \phi_\mathtt{c}^*\overline{\alpha_\mathtt{c}}$$

on $X_K(\mathbb{C})$ does not depend on the choice of the pair $(\alpha,\alpha_\mathtt{c})$, which is moreover in $\mathrm{H}^2_\mathrm{B}(X_K,M_\mu(1))$. By [BMM16, Proposition 5.19] and [Liu14, Lemma 5.3], $\phi\diamond\phi_\mathtt{c}$ is a Kudla–Milson form which, in the notation of [BMM16, (8.8)], equals $\theta_{\psi_F,\mu,\tilde{\boldsymbol{\phi}}}(-,1)$, where

$$\tilde{\boldsymbol{\phi}} = \varphi_{1,1} \otimes \left(\bigotimes_{\Phi_F\backslash\{\tau\}} \varphi_0\right) \otimes \boldsymbol{\phi}$$

for a unique $\boldsymbol{\phi} \in \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty))$ as in [BMM16, (8.9)]. The assignment $(\phi,\phi_\mathtt{c}) \mapsto \boldsymbol{\phi}$ gives rise to a map

$$\mathfrak{d}\colon \Omega(\mu,\varepsilon)\otimes_{M_\mu}\Omega(\mu^\mathtt{c},-\varepsilon)\otimes_{M_\mu}\mathbb{C} \to \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty)). \tag{5.4}$$

Lemma 5.5. *The map $\mathfrak{d}$ (5.4) is an isomorphism of $\mathbb{C}[\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)]$-modules.*

Proof. For $g \in \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^{\infty})$, we have

$$g\phi \diamond g\phi_{\mathtt{c}} = \mathtt{T}_g^*(\phi \diamond \phi_{\mathtt{c}}) = \mathtt{T}_g^*\theta_{\psi_F,\mu,\tilde{\boldsymbol{\phi}}}(-,1) = \theta_{\psi_F,\mu,\mathtt{T}_g^*\tilde{\boldsymbol{\phi}}}(-,1).$$

On the other hand, we have

$$\mathtt{T}_g^*\tilde{\boldsymbol{\phi}} = \varphi_{1,1} \otimes \left(\bigotimes_{\Phi_F \setminus \{\tau\}} \varphi_0 \right) \otimes (g.\boldsymbol{\phi}).$$

Thus, $\mathfrak{d}$ is $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^{\infty})$-equivariant. The map $\mathfrak{d}$ is apparently injective, so is surjective by [Liu14, Lemma 5.3]. The lemma follows. □

Lemma 5.6. *We have*

(1) *The cohomology class* $\mathrm{cl}_{\mathrm{B}}(\mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K}^{\phi,\phi_{\mathtt{c}},P,Q}) \in \mathrm{H}^2_{\mathrm{B}}(X_K \times X_K, \mathbb{C})$ *depends only on* $\mathfrak{d}(\phi \otimes \phi_{\mathtt{c}})$.

(2) *There is a unique* $\mathbb{C}$*-linear map*

$$\begin{aligned} \mathrm{c}\mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K} \colon \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^{\infty}))^K &\to \mathrm{H}^2_{\mathrm{B}}(X_K \times X_K, \mathbb{C}) \\ \boldsymbol{\phi} &\mapsto \mathrm{c}\mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K}^{\boldsymbol{\phi}} \end{aligned}$$

such that

(a) *for every pair* $(\phi, \phi_{\mathtt{c}}) \in \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu, \varepsilon) \times \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu^\vee, -\varepsilon)$ *and every elements* $P, Q \in X_K(\pi_0(X'_K))$*, we have* $\mathrm{c}\mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K}^{\mathfrak{d}(\phi\otimes\phi_{\mathtt{c}})} = \mathrm{cl}_{\mathrm{B}}(\mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K}^{\phi,\phi_{\mathtt{c}},P,Q})$,

(b) $\Delta^*\mathrm{c}\mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K}^{\boldsymbol{\phi}} = \mathrm{cl}_{\mathrm{B}}(Z(\boldsymbol{\phi})_K) \in \mathrm{H}^2_{\mathrm{B}}(X_K, \mathbb{C})$ *for every* $\boldsymbol{\phi} \in \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^{\infty}))^K$.

Proof. The class $\mathrm{cl}_{\mathrm{B}}(\mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K}^{\phi,\phi_{\mathtt{c}},P,Q}) \in \mathrm{H}^2_{\mathrm{B}}(X_K \times X_K, \mathbb{C})$ is given by the $(1,1)$-form $\mathtt{p}_1^*\phi^*\alpha \wedge \mathtt{p}_2^*\phi_{\mathtt{c}}^*\overline{\alpha_{\mathtt{c}}}$ on $X_K(\mathbb{C}) \times X_K(\mathbb{C})$. Part (1) follows immediately.

For (2), by (1) and Lemma 5.5, there is a unique $\mathbb{C}$-linear map $\mathrm{c}\mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K}$ satisfying (a). However, it also satisfies (b) due to [BMM16, Proposition 8.3]. □

Remark 5.7. The maps $\{\mathrm{c}\mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K}\}_K$ in Lemma 5.6 are clearly compatible under pullbacks, hence induce a $\mathbb{C}$-linear map

$$\mathrm{c}\mathcal{Q}_\mu \colon \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^{\infty})) \to \mathrm{H}^2_{\mathrm{B}}(X_\infty \times X_\infty, \mathbb{C}) \coloneqq \varinjlim_K \mathrm{H}^2_{\mathrm{B}}(X_K \times X_K, \mathbb{C}).$$

Definition 5.8. We say that an element $Z_K \in \mathrm{Z}^1(X_K \times X_K)_{\mathbb{C}}$ is a *doubling divisor (of level K)* for an element $\boldsymbol{\phi} \in \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty))^K$ if $\mathrm{cl}_{\mathrm{B}}(Z_K) = \mathrm{c}\mathcal{Q}^{\boldsymbol{\phi}}_{\mu,K}$, and Z_K has proper intersection with ΔX_K.

Lemma 5.9. *For every element $\boldsymbol{\phi} \in \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty))^K$, there exists a doubling divisor of level K.*

Proof. By linearity, it suffices to consider the case $\boldsymbol{\phi} = \mathfrak{d}(\phi \otimes \phi_{\mathsf{c}})$ for $(\phi, \phi_{\mathsf{c}}) \in \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu, \varepsilon) \times \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu^\vee, -\varepsilon)$. Take an intermediate number field $E \subseteq E' \subseteq \mathbb{C}$ such that E' is Galois over E, splits X_K, and satisfies $X_K(\pi_0(X'_E)) \neq \emptyset$. We choose an element $P \in X_K(\pi_0(X'_E))$. Then

$$Z_K \coloneqq \frac{1}{[E' : E]} \sum_{\sigma \in \mathrm{Gal}(E'/E)} \mathcal{Q}^{\phi,\phi_{\mathsf{c}},\sigma P,\sigma P}_{\mu,K}$$

is an element in $\mathrm{Z}^1(X_K \times X_K)_{M_\mu}$ such that $\mathrm{cl}_{\mathrm{B}}(Z_K) = \mathrm{c}\mathcal{Q}^{\boldsymbol{\phi}}_{\mu,K}$ by Lemma 5.6(2). By Chow's moving lemma, we may replace Z_K by another rationally equivalent cycle that has proper intersection with ΔX_K. The lemma follows. ☐

Now we can state and prove our doubling formula for CM data.

Proposition 5.10. *Put $\boldsymbol{f}_i \coloneqq f_i^{\mathrm{t}} * f_i^\vee$ for $i = 1, 2$. If we write $\boldsymbol{f}_1 = \sum_s d_s \mathbb{1}_{g_s^{-1} K \cap K g_s^{-1}}$ as a finite sum with $d_s \in \mathbb{L}$ and $g_s \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$,*[10] *then*

$$(5.1) = \sum_s d_s \cdot \langle \mathsf{p}_{135}^* \Delta_z^3 X_{K_s}, (\Delta X_{K_s} \times \mathrm{T}_{K_s}^{\mathrm{L}_{g_s} \boldsymbol{f}_2} \times Z_{K_s}^s).\mathsf{p}_{246}^* \Delta_z^3 X_{K_s} \rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{X^6_{K_s}}$$

holds, where $K_s \coloneqq K \cap g_s K g_s^{-1}$, and $Z_{K_s}^s \in \mathrm{Z}^1(X_K \times X_K)_{\mathbb{C}}$ is an arbitrary doubling divisor for $\mathfrak{d}(\phi \otimes g_s \phi_{\mathsf{c}})$ (which exists by Lemma 5.9).

Proof. To shorten notation, we put $\delta_K \coloneqq (\deg D_K^{n-1})^{-1}$.

By Lemma 5.1 and Lemma 5.2, (5.1) equals

$$\frac{\delta_K^2}{[E' : E]} \sum_{i,j} c_i c_j \langle \mathsf{p}_{123}^* \Delta_z^3 X_K, (X'_K \times X'_K \times \mathcal{Q}^{\phi,\phi_{\mathsf{c}},P_i,P_j}_{\mu,K}).\mathsf{p}_{124}^* \Delta^3_{z,\boldsymbol{f}_1,\boldsymbol{f}_2} X_K \rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{(X'_K)^4}. \tag{5.5}$$

[10] It is elementary to see that every element in $\mathscr{H}_{K,\mathbb{L}}$ can be written in this way.

By Remark 4.38(1), we may replace K by $K' \coloneqq \bigcap_s (g_s^{-1}Kg_s \cap K_s)$ and possibly enlarge E' to obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
(5.5) &= \frac{\delta_{K'}^2}{[E':E]} \sum_{i,j} c_i c_j \langle \mathtt{p}_{123}^* \Delta_z^3 X_{K'}, \\
&\qquad (X'_{K'} \times X'_{K'} \times \mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K'}^{\phi,\phi_{\mathrm{c}},P_i,P_j}).\mathtt{p}_{124}^* \Delta^3_{z,\boldsymbol{f}_1,\boldsymbol{f}_2} X_{K'} \rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{(X'_{K'})^4} \\
&= \frac{d_{K'}^2}{[E':E]} \sum_{i,j,s} c_i c_j d_s \langle \mathtt{p}_{123}^* \Delta_z^3 X_{K'}, \qquad (5.6) \\
&\qquad (X'_{K'} \times X'_{K'} \times \mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K'}^{\phi,\phi_{\mathrm{c}},P_i,P_j}).\mathtt{p}_{124}^* \Delta^3_{z,\mathbb{1}_{g_s^{-1}K\cap Kg_s^{-1}},\boldsymbol{f}_2} X_{K'} \rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{(X'_{K'})^4}.
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $\mathrm{L}_{g_s}\mathbb{1}_{g_s^{-1}K\cap Kg_s^{-1}} = \mathbb{1}_{K\cap g_sKg_s^{-1}} = \mathbb{1}_{K_s}$, by Lemma 4.30, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
(5.6) &= \frac{\delta_{K'}^2}{[E':E]} \sum_{i,j,s} c_i c_j d_s \langle \mathtt{p}_{123}^* \Delta_z^3 X_{K'}, \\
&\qquad (X'_{K'} \times X'_{K'} \times \mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K'}^{\phi,g_s\phi_{\mathrm{c}},P_i^s,P_j^s}).\mathtt{p}_{124}^* \Delta^3_{z,\mathbb{1}_{K_s},\mathrm{L}_{g_s}\boldsymbol{f}_2} X_{K'} \rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{(X'_{K'})^4} \\
&= \sum_s \frac{d_s \cdot \delta_{K'}^2}{[E':E]} \sum_{i,j} c_i c_j \langle \mathtt{p}_{123}^* \Delta_z^3 X_{K'}, \qquad (5.7) \\
&\qquad (X'_{K'} \times X'_{K'} \times \mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K'}^{\phi,g_s\phi_{\mathrm{c}},P_i^s,P_j^s}).\mathtt{p}_{124}^* \Delta^3_{z,\mathbb{1}_{K_s},\mathrm{L}_{g_s}\boldsymbol{f}_2} X_{K'} \rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{(X'_{K'})^4}.
\end{aligned}
$$

For each individual s, we may descend the corresponding term down to X'_{K_s} again by Remark 4.38(1). Choose a representative $\sum_i c_i^s P_i^s$ of $D_{K_s}^{n-1}$ with $c_i^s \in \mathbb{Q}$ and $P_i^s \in X_{K_s}(\pi_0(X'_{K_s}))$. Moreover, by Lemma 3.5 and Lemma 5.6, we may replace $\mathcal{Q}_{\mu,K_s}^{\phi,g_s\phi_{\mathrm{c}},P_i^s,P_j^s}$ by $Z_{K_s}^s \otimes_E E'$. Then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
(5.7) &= \sum_s d_s \cdot \delta_{K_s}^2 \\
&\quad \cdot \sum_{i,j} c_i^s c_j^s \langle \mathtt{p}_{123}^* \Delta_z^3 X_{K_s}, (X_{K_s} \times X_{K_s} \times Z_{K_s}^s).\mathtt{p}_{124}^* \Delta^3_{z,\mathbb{1}_{K_s},\mathrm{L}_{g_s}\boldsymbol{f}_2} X_{K_s} \rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{(X_{K_s})^4} \\
&= \sum_s d_s \langle \mathtt{p}_{123}^* \Delta_z^3 X_{K_s}, (X_{K_s} \times X_{K_s} \times Z_{K_s}^s).\mathtt{p}_{124}^* \Delta^3_{z,\mathbb{1}_{K_s},\mathrm{L}_{g_s}\boldsymbol{f}_2} X_{K_s} \rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{(X_{K_s})^4},
\end{aligned}
$$

where in the second equality, we use the fact that $\sum_i c_i^s = \deg D_{K_s}^{n-1} = \delta_{K_s}^{-1}$. The proposition then follows by [Beĭ87, 4.0.3]. ☐

Remark 5.11. Proposition 5.10 implies that, for given data $f_1, f_2, f_1^\vee, f_2^\vee, z$, the assignment

$$\begin{aligned}&\mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu, \varepsilon) \times \mathrm{Hom}_E(A_K, A_\mu^\vee, -\varepsilon) \to \mathbb{C}\\&(\phi, \phi_{\mathsf{c}}) \mapsto \mathrm{vol}(K)^2 \cdot \langle \mathrm{FJ}(f_1, f_2; \phi)^z_K, \mathrm{FJ}(f_1^\vee, f_2^\vee; \phi_{\mathsf{c}})^z_K \rangle^{\mathrm{BBP}}_{X_K \times X_K, A_\mu}\end{aligned}$$

factors through $\Omega(\mu, \varepsilon) \otimes_{M_\mu} \Omega(\mu^{\mathsf{c}}, -\varepsilon)$ and extends uniquely to an M_μ-linear map

$$\Omega(\mu, \varepsilon) \otimes_{M_\mu} \Omega(\mu^{\mathsf{c}}, -\varepsilon) \to \mathbb{C}$$

by considering all level subgroups K.

5.2. Arithmetic invariant functionals

In view of Proposition 5.10, we need to study global arithmetic invariant functionals defined as follows.

Definition 5.12 (Global arithmetic invariant functional)**.** Let $K \subseteq \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$ be a level subgroup. For test functions $\boldsymbol{f} \in \mathscr{H}_{K,\mathbb{C}}$ and $\boldsymbol{\phi} \in \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty))^K$, we define the *global arithmetic invariant functional* to be

$$\mathcal{I}^z_K(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi}) \coloneqq \langle \mathtt{p}^*_{135} \Delta^3_z X_K, (\Delta X_K \times \mathtt{T}^{\boldsymbol{f}}_K \times Z_K).\mathtt{p}^*_{246} \Delta^3_z X_K \rangle^{\mathrm{BB}}_{X^6_K},$$

where $Z_K \in \mathrm{Z}^1(X_K \times X_K)_{\mathbb{C}}$ is an arbitrary doubling divisor for $\boldsymbol{\phi}$ (Definition 5.8, linearly extended to coefficients in $\mathbb{C}$).

We introduce two important conventions, which will be adopted from now on.

1. (1) We will regard $\mathtt{T}^{\boldsymbol{f}}_K$ as an algebraic cycle, rather than a Chow cycle, on $X_K \times X_K$.
2. (2) Whenever we have two cycles A and B in a regular scheme X that have proper intersection, $A.B$ will be regarded as the cycle $\sum_C m_C(A, B) \cdot C$ (rather than the associated Chow cycle), where the sum is taken over all irreducible components C in $A \cap B$ with $m_C(A, B)$ the intersection multiplicity.

Definition 5.13. Let $K \subseteq \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$ be a level subgroup. For a doubling divisor $Z_K \in \mathrm{Z}^1(X_K \times X_K)_{\mathbb{C}}$ for $\boldsymbol{\phi} \in \mathscr{S}(\mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty))^K$, we put

$$Z^\heartsuit_K \coloneqq Z_K - \mathtt{p}^*_2(\Delta X_K.Z_K - Z(\boldsymbol{\phi})_K),$$

where we regard $\Delta X_K.Z_K$ as in $\mathrm{Z}^1(X_K)_{\mathbb{C}}$ and recall that $\mathtt{p}_2 \colon X_K \times X_K \to X_K$ is the projection to the second factor.

It is clear that $Z_K^\heartsuit \in \mathrm{CZ}^1(X_K \times X_K)$ (Definition 3.3), $\Delta X_K.Z_K^\heartsuit = Z(\boldsymbol{\phi})_K$, $\mathrm{cl}_\mathrm{B}(Z_K^\heartsuit) = \mathrm{cl}_\mathrm{B}(Z_K)$ by Lemma 5.6(2), and

$$\mathcal{I}_K^z(\boldsymbol{f},\boldsymbol{\phi}) = \langle \mathtt{p}_{135}^*\Delta_z^3 X_K, (\Delta X_K \times \mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}} \times Z_K^\heartsuit).\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta_z^3 X_K\rangle_{X_K^6}^{\mathrm{BB}} \tag{5.8}$$

by Lemma 3.5.

To proceed, we introduce the notation of (relative) regular semisimple elements.

Definition 5.14. Consider a field extension F'/F and put $E' \coloneqq E \otimes_F F'$.

(1) We say that a pair of elements $(\xi, x) \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F') \times \mathrm{V}(E')$ is *regular semisimple* if the vectors $\{\xi^i x \mid i = 0, \dots, n-1\}$ span the E'-module $\mathrm{V}(E')$.
(2) The group $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F')$ acts on $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F') \times \mathrm{V}(E')$ via the formula $(\xi, x)g = (g^{-1}\xi g, g^{-1}x)$, which preserves regular semisimple pairs. Denote by $[\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F') \times \mathrm{V}(E')]$ the orbits of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F') \times \mathrm{V}(E')$ under the above action, and by $[\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F') \times \mathrm{V}(E')]_\mathrm{rs}$ the subset of regular semisimple orbits.
(3) We say that a function on $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F') \times \mathrm{V}(E')$ is *regularly supported* if its support consists of only regular semisimple pairs.
(4) We say that a function $\boldsymbol{F}$ on $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty) \times \mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty)$ is *regularly supported* at some nonarchimedean place v of F if we can write $\boldsymbol{F} = \boldsymbol{F}^v \otimes \boldsymbol{F}_v$ in which $\boldsymbol{F}_v$, as a function on $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F_v) \times \mathrm{V}(E_v)$, is regularly supported in the sense of (3).

Proposition 5.15. *Let $K, \boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi}, Z_K$ be as in Definition 5.12.*

(1) The cycles $\Delta X_K \times \mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}} \times Z_K^\heartsuit$ and $\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3 X_K$ intersect properly in X_K^6.
(2) If $\boldsymbol{f} \otimes \boldsymbol{\phi}$ is regularly supported at some nonarchimedean place v of F, then $\mathtt{p}_{135}^*\Delta^3 X_K$ and $(\Delta X_K \times \mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}} \times Z_K^\heartsuit).\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3 X_K$ have empty intersection on X_K^6.

Proof. For (1), we have to show that every irreducible component C of the intersection of $\Delta X_K \times \mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}} \times Z_K^\heartsuit$ and $\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3 X_K$ has dimension $2n-3$. However, it is easy to see that C is a closed subscheme of the fiber product

$$\Delta^3 X_K \times_{(X_K \times X_K \times X_K)} (X_K \times Y \times Z) \simeq Y \times_{X_K} Z,$$

where Y (resp. Z) is an irreducible component in the support of $\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}}$ (resp. $Z_K^\heartsuit$). But then the morphism $Y \to X_K$ is finite étale, and Z has dimension $2n-3$. Thus, C has dimension at most $2n-3$. On the other hand, since $\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3 X_K$ is a regular subscheme, the dimension of C is at least $2n-3$.

For (2), it is clear that the statement is equivalent to that $\Delta X_K \cap \mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}} \cap Z_K^{\heartsuit}$ is empty in $X_K \times X_K$. As $\Delta X_K \cap Z_K^{\heartsuit} = Z(\boldsymbol{\phi})_K$, we have to show that $\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}} \cap Z(\boldsymbol{\phi})_K = \emptyset$, which can be checked on $X_K(\mathbb{C}) \times X_K(\mathbb{C})$. By complex uniformization, we have

$$X_K(\mathbb{C}) = \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F) \backslash \left(\mathcal{D} \times \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty})/K\right),$$

where $\mathcal{D}$ is the corresponding hermitian domain of dimension $n-1$.

If $\boldsymbol{f} \equiv 0$, then there is nothing to prove. Otherwise, we have $\boldsymbol{\phi}(0) = 0$. Thus, we need to show that for every $x \in \mathrm{V}(E)^+$ and $g, h \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty})$, if $\boldsymbol{f}(h)\boldsymbol{\phi}(g^{-1}x) \neq 0$, then $\mathtt{T}_{KhK} \cap Z(x,g) = \emptyset$ in $X_K(\mathbb{C}) \times X_K(\mathbb{C})$. We prove by contradiction. Let $\mathcal{D}^x \subseteq \mathcal{D}$ be the subdomain that is perpendicular to x. If $\mathtt{T}_{KhK} \cap Z(x,g) \neq \emptyset$, then we may find $z_1 \in \mathcal{D}$, $g_1 \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty})$, $h \in KhK$, $z_x \in \mathcal{D}^x$, $g_x \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^x)(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty})$, and $\xi \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F)$, such that $(z_x, g_x g) = (z_1, g_1)$ and $(z_x, g_x g) = \xi(z_1, g_1 h)$. These relations imply that $z_x = \xi z_x$ and $g_x g = \xi g_x g h$. The second equality implies that $h^i g^{-1} x = g^{-1} g_x^{-1} \xi^{-i} x$ for $i \geqslant 0$. Now since $z_x = \xi z_x$, the vectors $\{x, \xi^{-1}x, \dots, \xi^{-(n-1)}x\} \subseteq \mathrm{V}(E)$ are linearly dependent. In particular, the pair $(h_v, g_v^{-1}x) \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F_v) \times \mathrm{V}(E_v)$ is not regular semisimple, which is a contradiction. Thus, (2) follows. □

We would also like to know whether one can choose a cycle representative of z_K such that $\mathtt{p}_{135}^*\Delta_z^3 X_K$ and $(\Delta X_K \times \mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}} \times Z_K^{\heartsuit}).\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta_z^3 X_K$ have empty intersection as well. At this moment, we do not find a uniform answer to this question. On the other hand, the contribution of the difference $\Delta^3 X_K - \Delta_z^3 X_K$ in the height pairing should be negligible in the comparison of relative trace formulae. In what follows, we will only consider $\Delta^3 X_K$ in the decomposition into local heights, suggested by Proposition 5.15. Moreover, in this article, we only consider the local heights at good inert primes, which we now explain.

Definition 5.16. We say that a prime $\mathfrak{p}$ of F is a *good inert prime* (with respect to $K, \boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi}$) if

- $\mathfrak{p}$ is inert in E,
- the underlying rational prime p is odd and unramified in E,
- if we denote by $\underline{\mathfrak{p}}$ the set of all primes of F above p that are inert in E, then there exists a self-dual lattice $\Lambda_{\mathfrak{q}} \subseteq \mathrm{V}(F_{\mathfrak{q}})$ for every $\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}}$ such that
    - $K = K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \times \prod_{\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}}} K_{\mathfrak{q}}$ in which $K_{\mathfrak{q}}$ is the stabilizer of $\Lambda_{\mathfrak{q}}$ for every $\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}}$,
    - $\boldsymbol{f} = \boldsymbol{f}^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \otimes \bigotimes_{\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \boldsymbol{f}_{\mathfrak{q}}$ in which $\boldsymbol{f}_{\mathfrak{q}} = \mathbb{1}_{K_{\mathfrak{q}}}$,

– $\phi = \phi^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \otimes \bigotimes_{\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \phi_{\mathfrak{q}}$ in which $\phi_{\mathfrak{q}} = \mathbb{1}_{\Lambda_{\mathfrak{q}}}$.

We fix a good inert prime $\mathfrak{p}$. From now on, we work in the category $\mathrm{Sch}_{/O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}}$.

Let $\mathcal{X}_K$ be the canonical integral model of X_K over $O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}$ (Definition C.21), which is a proper smooth scheme in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}}$ of relative dimension $n-1$. Then the Zariski closure of $\mathtt{T}^{\boldsymbol{f}}_K$ in $\mathcal{X}_K \times \mathcal{X}_K$ is an étale correspondence, which will be denoted by the same notation. Let $\mathcal{Z}_K$ (resp. $\mathcal{Z}(\phi)_K$) be the Zariski closure of Z_K (resp. $Z(\phi)_K$) in $\mathcal{X}_K \times \mathcal{X}_K$ (resp. $\mathcal{X}_K$). Similar to $Z^{\heartsuit}_K$, we put

$$\mathcal{Z}^{\heartsuit}_K \coloneqq \mathcal{Z}_K - \mathtt{p}_2^*(\Delta\mathcal{X}_K.\mathcal{Z}_K - \mathcal{Z}(\phi)_K), \tag{5.9}$$

which is a formal series of divisors on $\mathcal{X}_K$, whose generic fiber is $Z^{\heartsuit}_K$.

From now on, we work in the category $\mathrm{Sch}_{/O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}}$.

Definition 5.17 (Local arithmetic invariant functional)**.** Let $K, \boldsymbol{f}, \phi, Z_K$ be as in Definition 5.12 such that $\boldsymbol{f} \otimes \phi$ is regularly supported at some nonarchimedean place v of F,[11] we define the *local arithmetic invariant functional* at (a good inert prime) $\mathfrak{p}$ to be

$$\mathcal{I}_K(\boldsymbol{f},\phi)_{\mathfrak{p}} \coloneqq 2\log|O_F/\mathfrak{p}| \cdot \chi\left(\mathcal{O}(\mathtt{p}_{135}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K) \otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}^6_K}} \mathcal{O}((\Delta\mathcal{X}_K \times \mathtt{T}^{\boldsymbol{f}}_K \times \mathcal{Z}^{\heartsuit}_K).\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K)\right),$$

where χ denotes the Euler–Poincaré characteristic (see Remark 5.18 below), and for a formal series $\sum_j c_j Z_j$ of cycles on $\mathcal{X}^6_K$, we put $\mathcal{O}(\sum_j c_j Z_j) \coloneqq \sum_j c_j \mathcal{O}_{Z_j}$ as a formal series of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}^6_K}$-modules.[12]

Remark 5.18. For a Noetherian scheme X, we denote by $\mathrm{D}^{\mathrm{b}}_{\mathrm{coh}}(X)$ the bounded derived category of $\mathcal{O}_X$-modules with coherent cohomology. By Proposition 5.15(2),

$$\mathcal{O}(\mathtt{p}_{135}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K) \otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}^6_K}} \mathcal{O}((\Delta\mathcal{X}_K \times \mathtt{T}^{\boldsymbol{f}}_K \times \mathcal{Z}^{\heartsuit}_K).\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K)$$

is a formal series in $\mathrm{D}^{\mathrm{b}}_{\mathrm{coh}}(\mathcal{X}^6_K \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{F}_p)$, which implies that its Euler–Poincaré characteristic is a formal series in $\mathbb{C}$.

[11] It is clear that v can not be in $\underline{\mathfrak{p}}$.

[12] The reason we add the factor 2 in front of $\log|O_F/\mathfrak{p}|$ is the following: $\mathcal{I}_K(\boldsymbol{f},\phi)_{\mathfrak{p}}$ is supposed to "approximate" the local term of $\mathcal{I}^{\natural}_K(\boldsymbol{f},\phi)$ at the unique place u of E above $\mathfrak{p}$, hence the factor $c(u)$ in (3.1) is $\log|O_E/\mathfrak{p}O_E| = 2\log|O_F/\mathfrak{p}|$.

Proposition 5.19. *In the situation of Definition 5.17, we have*

$$\mathcal{I}_K(\boldsymbol{f},\boldsymbol{\phi})_{\mathfrak{p}} = 2\log|O_F/\mathfrak{p}|\cdot\chi\left(\mathcal{O}(\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}})\otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_K^2}}\mathcal{O}(\Delta\mathcal{Z}(\boldsymbol{\phi})_K)\right).$$

Proof. First, by the same argument for Proposition 5.15(1), we know that $\Delta\mathcal{X}_K\times\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}}\times\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit}$ and $\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K$ have proper intersection on $\mathcal{X}_K^6$. Since $\Delta\mathcal{X}_K$, every component of $\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}}$, and $\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit}$ are all Cohen–Macaulay schemes, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
&\mathcal{O}((\Delta\mathcal{X}_K\times\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}}\times\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit}).\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K)\\
&\quad=\mathcal{O}(\Delta\mathcal{X}_K\times\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}}\times\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit})\otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_K^6}}\mathcal{O}(\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K)\\
&\quad=\mathcal{O}(\Delta\mathcal{X}_K\times\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}}\times\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit})\otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_K^6}}\mathcal{O}(\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K).
\end{aligned}$$

Thus, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
&\mathcal{O}(\mathtt{p}_{135}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K)\otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_K^6}}\mathcal{O}((\Delta\mathcal{X}_K\times\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}}\times\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit}).\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K)\\
&=\mathcal{O}(\mathtt{p}_{135}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K)\otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_K^6}}\mathcal{O}(\Delta\mathcal{X}_K\times\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}}\times\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit})\otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_K^6}}\mathcal{O}(\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K)\\
&=\left(\mathcal{O}(\mathtt{p}_{135}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K)\otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_K^6}}\mathcal{O}(\mathtt{p}_{246}^*\Delta^3\mathcal{X}_K)\right)\otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_K^6}}\mathcal{O}(\Delta\mathcal{X}_K\times\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}}\times\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit})\\
&=\mathcal{O}(\Delta^3(\mathcal{X}_K\times\mathcal{X}_K))\otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{(\mathcal{X}_K\times\mathcal{X}_K)^3}}\mathcal{O}(\Delta\mathcal{X}_K\times\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}}\times\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit}).
\end{aligned}$$

Restricting to $\mathcal{X}_K^2$, we have

$$\mathcal{I}_K(\boldsymbol{f},\boldsymbol{\phi})_{\mathfrak{p}} = 2\log|O_F/\mathfrak{p}|\cdot\chi\left(\mathcal{O}(\Delta\mathcal{X}_K)\otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_K^2}}\mathcal{O}(\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}})\otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_K^2}}\mathcal{O}(\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit})\right).$$

By (5.9), $\Delta\mathcal{X}_K$ and $\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit}$ have proper intersection. Since both have Cohen–Macaulay components, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{O}(\Delta\mathcal{X}_K)\otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_K^2}}\mathcal{O}(\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit})&\simeq\mathcal{O}(\Delta\mathcal{X}_K)\otimes_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{X}_K^2}}\mathcal{O}(\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit})\\
&=\mathcal{O}(\Delta\mathcal{X}_K\cap\mathcal{Z}_K^{\heartsuit})=\mathcal{O}(\Delta\mathcal{Z}(\boldsymbol{\phi})_K).
\end{aligned}$$

The proposition then follows. ∎

5.3. Orbital decomposition of local arithmetic invariant functionals

To further study the intersection number in Proposition 5.19, we need a certain moduli interpretation of the integral model $\mathcal{X}_K$ and $\mathcal{Z}(\boldsymbol{\phi})_K$. We will follow the discussion and notation in Subsection C.4. In particular, we denote by Spl_p the set of primes of F above p that are split in E.

Definition 5.20. A *frame* for the (good inert) prime $\mathfrak{p}$ (with the underlying rational prime p) contains the following

- an isomorphism between the two E-extensions $\mathbb{C}$ and $E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{ac}}$,
- a CM type Φ of E containing the fixed embedding τ', such that elements in Φ inducing the same prime in Spl_p induce the same prime of E (under the above isomorphism between $\mathbb{C}$ and $E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{ac}}$),
- a rational skew-hermitian space $\mathbf{W}_0^\infty$ over $\mathbf{A}_E^\infty$ of rank 1 such that $\mathcal{W}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})$ is nonempty and that $\mathbf{W}_0^\infty \otimes_{\mathbf{A}^\infty} \mathbb{Q}_p$ admits a self-dual lattice,
- a sufficiently small open compact subgroup $L_0 = L_0^p \times (L_0)_p$ of $\mathbf{H}_0^\infty(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$ in which $(L_0)_p$ is the stabilizer of a self-dual lattice in $\mathbf{W}_0^\infty \otimes_{\mathbf{A}^\infty} \mathbb{Q}_p$, where $\mathbf{H}_0^\infty$ is the group of similitude of $\mathbf{W}_0^\infty$,
- a point $\boldsymbol{P}\colon \operatorname{Spec} O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}} \to \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)^{\mathrm{nr}}_{K_{\mathfrak{p}}, L_0}$ as in (C.8), whose reduction is in the supersingular locus, where $E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}$ is the maximal unramified extension of $E_{\mathfrak{p}}$ contained in $E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{ac}}$.

Now we take a frame. Put $k := O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{F}_p$ and $\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}} := \mathcal{X}_K \otimes_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}} O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}$. By Remark C.22, the point $\boldsymbol{P}$ provides us with a Cartesian diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}} & \longrightarrow & \operatorname{Spec} O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}} \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow {\scriptstyle \mathbf{q}_0 \circ \boldsymbol{P}} \\ \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)^{\mathrm{nr}}_{K, L_0} & \xrightarrow{\mathbf{q}_0} & \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})_{L_0} \otimes_{O_{E_\Phi,(p)}} O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}} \end{array} \tag{5.10}$$

of schemes over $O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}$. In particular, for every locally Noetherian scheme S over $O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}$, the set $\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}}(S)$ consists of equivalence classes of nonuples $(A_0, i_0, \lambda_0, \eta_0^p; A, i, \lambda, \eta^p, \eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}})$ in which $(A_0, i_0, \lambda_0, \eta_0^p)$ is the base change of $(\boldsymbol{A}_0, \boldsymbol{i}_0, \boldsymbol{\lambda}_0, \boldsymbol{\eta}_0^p)$ to S.

We introduce the moduli interpretation of integral special divisors.

Definition 5.21. For $x \in \mathrm{V}(E)^+$ and $g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} = (g^p, g_{\mathfrak{q}} \,|\, \mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spl}_p) \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty, \underline{\mathfrak{p}}})$, we define a relative functor

$$\mathbf{s}_{x, g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}}\colon \mathcal{Z}(x, g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})^{\mathrm{nr}}_K \to \mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}}$$

in the way that the fiber over a point $(A_0, i_0, \lambda_0, \eta_0^p; A, i, \lambda, \eta^p, \eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}}) \in \mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}}(S)$ consists of

$$\rho \in \mathrm{Hom}_S((A_0, i_0), (A, i_A)) \otimes_{O_F} O_{F, (\underline{\mathfrak{p}})}$$

such that for every geometric point s of S,

- the element $\rho_* \in \mathrm{Hom}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_{0s},\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}),\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_s,\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}))$ belongs to $\eta^p((g^p)^{-1}x)$,
- the element $\rho_* \in \prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\mathrm{Spl}_p}\mathrm{Hom}_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}}}(A_{0s}[(\mathfrak{q}^-)^\infty],A_s[(\mathfrak{q}^-)^\infty])\otimes_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}}}E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}$ belongs to $\eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}}((g_{\mathfrak{q}}^{-1}x)_{\mathfrak{q}\in\mathrm{Spl}_p})$.

Proposition 5.22. *For $x\in\mathrm{V}(E)^+$ and $g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}\in\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})$, we have*

(1) The relative morphism $\mathbf{s}_{x,g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}}$ is representable, finite, and unramified.

(2) There is an isomorphism

$$\mathbf{s}_{x,g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}}\otimes_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}}E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}} \simeq \coprod_{(g_{\mathfrak{q}}|\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}),g_{\mathfrak{q}}\in\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^x)(F_{\mathfrak{q}})\backslash\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F_{\mathfrak{q}})/K_{\mathfrak{q}},g_{\mathfrak{q}}^{-1}x\in\Lambda_{\mathfrak{q}}}\mathbf{s}_{x,(g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},g_{\mathfrak{q}}|\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}})}\otimes_E E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}$$

of relative functors over $X_K\otimes_E E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}$, where $\mathbf{s}_{x,(g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},g_{\mathfrak{q}}|\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}})}$ is defined in Definition 5.3.

(3) For every point $z\in\mathcal{Z}(x,g)_K^{\mathrm{nr}}(k)$, the induced ring homomorphism $R_y\to R_z$ is surjective whose kernel is a principal ideal that is not contained in pR_y. Here R_z (resp. R_y) denotes completed local ring of $\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}}$ (resp. $\mathcal{Z}(x,g)_K^{\mathrm{nr}}$) at z (resp. $y:=\mathbf{s}_{x,g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}}(z)$).

Proof. Part (1) follows from the same argument in the proof of [KR14, Proposition 2.9].

For (2), put $X_K^{\mathrm{nr}}:=X_K\otimes_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}$. For every point

$$P=(A_0,i_0,\lambda_0,\eta_0^p;A,i,\lambda,\eta^p,\eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}})\in X_K^{\mathrm{nr}}(S),$$

we will construct a functorial bijection $\mathbf{s}_{x,g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}}^{-1}P\xrightarrow{\sim}\coprod_g\mathbf{s}_{x,g}^{-1}P$ between the fibers.

For the forward direction, take an element ρ as in Definition 5.21. Let (A_ρ,i_ρ) be the quotient abelian scheme $(A/\rho(A_0),i)$, which is naturally an $(E,\mathrm{sig}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}-\Phi^{\mathtt{c}})$-abelian scheme (Definition C.10). Denote by $\varrho\colon A\to A_\rho$ the quotient homomorphism, and define a homomorphism $\rho_0:=c\lambda_0^{-1}\circ\rho^\vee\circ\lambda\colon A\to A_0$ for some $c\in\mathbb{Z}_{(p)}^\times$. Then we obtain a prime-to-$\underline{\mathfrak{p}}$ isogeny $(\varrho,\rho_0)\colon A\to A_\rho\times A_0$. Let λ_ρ be the induced $\underline{\mathfrak{p}}$-principal polarization of (A_ρ,i_ρ). Choose a representative η^p in its K^p-class such that $\varrho_*\circ\eta^p((g^p)^{-1}x)$ is the zero map. We define η_ρ^p to be the composition

$$\mathrm{V}^x(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,p})\hookrightarrow\mathrm{V}(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,p})$$

$$\xrightarrow{\eta^p} \mathrm{Hom}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_{0s},\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}),\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_s,\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}))$$
$$\xrightarrow{\varrho_*\circ} \mathrm{Hom}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_{0s},\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}),\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_{\rho s},\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p})).$$

Let $\eta^p_x\colon \mathbf{A}_E^{\infty,p}x \to \mathrm{Hom}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_{0s},\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}),\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_{0s},\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}))$ be the homomorphism sending x to $c\cdot(x,x)_{\mathrm{V}}$. Then we have $(\eta^p_\rho\oplus\eta^p_x)\circ(g^p)^{-1} = (\varrho,\rho_0)_*\circ\eta^p$. We have a similar construction for $\eta^{\mathrm{spl}}_{p\rho}$, whose details we omit. Finally, we obtain $(A_0,i_0,\lambda_0,\eta^p_0;A_\rho,i_\rho,\lambda_\rho,\eta^p_\rho,\eta^{\mathrm{spl}}_{p\rho})$ together with the O_E-linear prime-to-$\underline{\mathfrak{p}}$ isogeny $(\varrho,\rho_0)\colon A\to A_\rho\times A_0$, which provides an element in the fiber $\mathsf{s}_{x,g}^{-1}P$, where $g=(g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},g_{\mathfrak{q}}\mid\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}})$ is (a representative in) the unique double coset in the disjoint union satisfying $g_{\mathfrak{q}}^{-1}x=\rho_*$ under any isomorphism $\Lambda_{\mathfrak{q}}\simeq\mathrm{Hom}_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}}}}(\mathrm{T}_{\mathfrak{q}}A_{0s},\mathrm{T}_{\mathfrak{q}}A_s)$ of hermitian lattices over $O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}}}$, where $\mathrm{T}_{\mathfrak{q}}$ denotes the $\mathfrak{q}$-adic Tate module.

For the backward direction, take an element in the fiber $\mathsf{s}_{x,g}^{-1}P$ for g in the disjoint union, given by data

$$(A_0,i_0,\lambda_0,\eta^p_0;A',i',\lambda',\eta^{p\prime},\eta^{\mathrm{spl}\prime}_p)\in\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}^x,\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V}^x,\tau'})_{gKg^{-1}\cap\mathrm{G}^x(\mathbf{A}^\infty)}(S)$$

together with an O_E-linear prime-to-$\underline{\mathfrak{p}}$ isogeny $\rho'\colon A\to A'\times A_0$ satisfying relevant properties. We just take ρ as the composite homomorphism

$$A_0\xrightarrow{\lambda_0}A_0^\vee\xrightarrow{\rho'^\vee|A_0^\vee}A^\vee\xrightarrow{c\lambda^{-1}}A$$

for some $c\in O^\times_{F,(\underline{\mathfrak{p}})}$. It is straightforward to check that the above constructions are inverse to each other, hence (2) is proved.

For (3), let I be the kernel of $R_y\to R_z$. To show that I is principal, we follow the strategy in the proof of [How15, Proposition 3.2.3] for the case $F=\mathbb{Q}$.[13] Let $(A_0,i_0,\lambda_0,\eta^p_0;A,i,\lambda,\eta^p,\eta^{\mathrm{spl}}_p)$ be the universal object over R_y, which is equipped with the universal O_E-linear homomorphism $\rho\colon(A_0)_{R_z}\to A_{R_z}$. It suffices to study the obstruction to lifting ρ to a homomorphism $A_{0S}\to A_S$ where $S\coloneqq R_y/\mathfrak{m}I$ with $\mathfrak{m}$ the maximal ideal of R_y. Note that the Hodge exact sequence

$$0\to\mathrm{Fil}\,\mathrm{H}_1^{\mathrm{dR}}(A_0)\to\mathrm{H}_1^{\mathrm{dR}}(A_0)\to\mathrm{Lie}(A_0)\to 0$$

splits into a direct sum of

$$0\to\mathrm{Fil}\,\mathrm{H}_1^{\mathrm{dR}}(A_0)_{\mathfrak{q}}\to\mathrm{H}_1^{\mathrm{dR}}(A_0)_{\mathfrak{q}}\to\mathrm{Lie}(A_0)_{\mathfrak{q}}\to 0$$

[13] Note that [How15] considers all residue characteristics; while we only consider p that is unramified in E.

indexed by primes $\mathfrak{q}$ of F above p, in which $\mathrm{H}_1^{\mathrm{dR}}(A_0)_{\mathfrak{q}}$ is the direct summand of $\mathrm{H}_1^{\mathrm{dR}}(A_0)$ on which $O_{F,(p)}$ acts via the prime $\mathfrak{q}$. We have a similar splitting for A. Moreover $\mathrm{H}_1^{\mathrm{dR}}(A_0)_{\mathfrak{q}}$ (resp. $\mathrm{H}_1^{\mathrm{dR}}(A)_{\mathfrak{q}}$) is a free $O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}}} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}_p} R_y$-module of rank 1 (resp. n). By the signature condition, the obstruction to lifting ρ coincides with the obstruction for the canonical lifting $\tilde{\rho}_*\colon \mathrm{H}_1^{\mathrm{dR}}(A_{0S})_{\mathfrak{p}} \to \mathrm{H}_1^{\mathrm{dR}}(A_S)_{\mathfrak{p}}$ to respect Hodge filtration. The remaining argument is then same as [How15, p.668] by taking $\mathbf{j} \coloneqq \pi \otimes 1_S - 1 \otimes \pi_S$ for some $\pi \in O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}^\times \cap E_{\mathfrak{p}}^-$. Note that, $\mathbf{j}.\mathrm{Lie}(A_k)$ is always nonzero in our case.

Finally, we show that I is not contained in pR_y. If it is, then by (1) the image of $\mathbf{s}_{x,g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}}$ contains the entire connected component of $(\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}})_k$ at y. Thus, for every k-point $(A_0, i_0, \lambda_0, \eta_0^p; A, i, \lambda, \eta^p, \eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}})$ in this connected component, there exists a nonzero homomorphism from (A_0, i_0) to (A, i). In particular, (A, i) is not μ-ordinary, which contradicts to the main theorem of [Wed99] saying that μ-ordinary locus is dense. Here, we apply [Wed99] to the PEL type moduli scheme in Remark C.13 parameterizing $(A, i, \lambda, \tilde{\eta}^p)$ where $\tilde{\eta}^p$ is an away-from-p level structure induced from λ_0^p and η^p. Thus, (3) is proved. □

By the above proposition, $(\mathbf{s}_{x,g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}})_*\mathcal{Z}(x, g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})_K^{\mathrm{nr}}$ is a relative divisor on $\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}}$. In what follows, by abuse of notation, we denote the cycle $(\mathbf{s}_{x,g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}})_*\mathcal{Z}(x, g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})_K^{\mathrm{nr}}$ again by $\mathcal{Z}(x, g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})_K^{\mathrm{nr}}$. The following corollary is immediate.

Corollary 5.23. *Let $\mathfrak{p}$ be a good inert prime. If $\phi(0) = 0$, then we have*

$$\begin{aligned}
&\mathcal{Z}(\phi)_K \otimes_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}} O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}} \\
&= \sum_{x \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F)\backslash \mathrm{V}(E)^+} \mathrm{e}^{-2\pi \cdot \mathrm{Tr}_{F/\mathbb{Q}}(x,x)_{\mathrm{V}}} \\
&\qquad \sum_{g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^x)(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})\backslash \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})/K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}} \phi^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}((g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})^{-1}x)\mathcal{Z}(x, g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})_K^{\mathrm{nr}}
\end{aligned}$$

as a formal series in $\mathrm{Z}^1(\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}})_{\mathbb{C}}$.

Proof. By Proposition 5.22, the relative divisor $\mathcal{Z}(x, g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})_K^{\mathrm{nr}}$ is the Zariski closure of

$$\sum_{(g_{\mathfrak{q}} | \mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}}), g_{\mathfrak{q}} \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^x)(F_{\mathfrak{q}})\backslash \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F_{\mathfrak{q}})/K_{\mathfrak{q}}} \prod_{\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \mathbb{1}_{\Lambda_{\mathfrak{q}}}(g_{\mathfrak{q}}^{-1}x) \cdot Z(x, (g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}, g_{\mathfrak{q}} \mid \mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}}))_K$$

in $\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}}$. The corollary follows since $\phi = \phi^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \otimes \bigotimes_{\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \phi_{\mathfrak{q}}$ in which $\phi_{\mathfrak{q}} = \mathbb{1}_{\Lambda_{\mathfrak{q}}}$. □

Lemma 5.24. *Let $K, \boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi}$ be as in Definition 5.12 such that $\boldsymbol{f} \otimes \boldsymbol{\phi}$ is regularly supported at some nonarchimedean place v of F. For a point $y \in \mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}}(k)$, if (y, y) belongs to both $\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}}$ and the support of $\Delta\mathcal{Z}(\boldsymbol{\phi})_K$, then y is supersingular (Definition C.24).*

Proof. By Corollary 5.23, it suffices to consider $\mathtt{T}_{KhK} \cap \mathcal{Z}(x, g)_K^{\mathrm{nr}}$ for some $g, h \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty, \underline{\mathfrak{p}}})$ and $x \in \mathrm{V}(E)^+$ such that $(h_v, g_v^{-1}x)$ is regular semisimple for some nonarchimedean place $v \notin \underline{\mathfrak{p}}$. We only consider the case where v is not above p, and leave the similar case where $v \in \mathrm{Spl}_p$ to the reader.

Let (y, y) be a k-point in $\mathtt{T}_{KhK} \cap \mathcal{Z}(x, g)_K^{\mathrm{nr}}$, with y as in the lemma represented by the object $(A_0, i_0, \lambda_0, \eta_0^p; A, i, \lambda, \eta^p, \eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}}) \in \mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}}(k)$. By the moduli interpretation, there is a coprime-to-$\underline{\mathfrak{p}}$ isogeny $\xi\colon A \to A$ such that $\xi_*\eta^p = \eta^p \circ h^p$, and an element $\rho \in \mathrm{Hom}_k((A_0, i_0), (A, i)) \otimes_{O_F} O_{F,(\underline{\mathfrak{p}})}$ such that the element $\rho_* \in \mathrm{Hom}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_0, \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}), \mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A, \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}))$ belongs to $\eta^p((g^p)^{-1}x)$. Consider the situation at v. We may choose a representation κ_v in the K_v-class of η_v^p such that $\rho_{*v} = \eta_v^p(g_v^{-1}x)$. Possibly replacing h_v by some element in $K_v h_v K_v$, we have $(\xi^i \circ \rho)_{*v} = \eta_v^p(h_v^i g_v^{-1}x)$ for every integer $i \geqslant 0$. Since $(h_v, g_v^{-1}x)$ is regular semisimple, the set $\{(\xi^i \circ \rho)_{*v}, i \geqslant 0\}$ generates $\mathrm{Hom}_{O_{E_v}}(\mathrm{T}_v A_0, \mathrm{T}_v A)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ as an E_v-module, where T_v denotes the v-adic Tate module. In particular, $\mathrm{Hom}_k((A_0, i_0), (A, i))_{\mathbb{Q}}$ has dimension n over E. Thus, $A[\mathfrak{p}^\infty]$ is isogenous to $A_0[\mathfrak{p}^\infty]^{\oplus n}$, hence is supersingular. ☐

In Subsection C.4, we define the supersingular locus $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}, L_0}^{\mathrm{ss}}$. For a level subgroup K as above, we define $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K, L_0}^{\mathrm{ss}}$ to be the image of $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}, L_0}^{\mathrm{ss}}$ under the natural quotient morphism

$$\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}, L_0} \to \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K, L_0}.$$

Define $\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{ss}}$ to be the preimage of $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K, L_0}^{\mathrm{ss}}$ under the left vertical morphism in the diagram (5.10), which is a Zariski closed subset of $\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}} \otimes_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}} k$. Finally, let $\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{ss},\wedge}$ be the completion of $\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{nr}}$ along $\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{ss}}$. Proposition C.26 provides us with the following uniformization isomorphism

$$\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{ss},\wedge} \simeq \mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F) \backslash \left(\mathcal{N} \times \mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\mathfrak{p}})/\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}\right) \tag{5.11}$$

depending on the frame we chose,[14] in particular, the point $\boldsymbol{P}$. Here, $\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}} = \bar{K}^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \times \prod_{\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}} \setminus \{\mathfrak{p}\}} \bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}$, where $\bar{K}^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} = K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$ under the isomorphism $\iota_{\boldsymbol{P}}$ and $\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}$ is the stabilizer of $\bar{\Lambda}_{\mathfrak{q}}$ in Lemma C.25(6). The uniformization isomorphism is

[14]However, one can show that the supersingular locus $\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{ss}}$ itself is intrinsic, which does not depend on the choice of the frame.

functorial in $K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$ and under Hecke translations. We recall the new hermitian space

$$\bar{\mathrm{V}} \coloneqq \mathrm{Hom}_k((\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}, \boldsymbol{i}_{0k}), (\boldsymbol{A}_k, \boldsymbol{i}_k))_{\mathbb{Q}}$$

equipped with the hermitian form (C.11), satisfying Lemma C.25, which is "$\mathfrak{p}$-nearby to $\mathbf{V}$". In particular, we have an isomorphism

$$\bar{\mathrm{V}} \otimes_F F_{\mathfrak{p}} \simeq \mathrm{Hom}_k((\boldsymbol{X}_{0k}, \boldsymbol{i}_{0k}), (\boldsymbol{X}_k, \boldsymbol{i}_k))_{\mathbb{Q}}.$$

Applying the constructions from Subsection 1.3,[15] we have for every nonzero $\bar{x} \in \bar{\mathrm{V}}(E_{\mathfrak{p}})$, a sub-formal scheme $\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x})$ of $\mathcal{N}$; and for every $\bar{g} \in \mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F_{\mathfrak{p}})$, an isomorphism $\bar{g}\colon \mathcal{N} \to \mathcal{N}$ with its graph $\Gamma_{\bar{g}} \subseteq \mathcal{N}^2 \coloneqq \mathcal{N} \times_{O_{\breve{E}^{\mathrm{nr}}_{\mathfrak{p}}}} \mathcal{N}$. Now we arrive at the theorem on the orbital decomposition.

Theorem 5.25. *Let $K, \boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi}$ be as in Definition 5.12 such that $\boldsymbol{f} \otimes \boldsymbol{\phi}$ is regularly supported at some nonarchimedean place v of F. For a good inert prime $\mathfrak{p}$, we have*

$$\begin{aligned}
&\mathcal{I}_K(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi})_{\mathfrak{p}} \\
&\quad = 2\log|O_F/\mathfrak{p}| \cdot \sum_{(\bar{\xi},\bar{x}) \in [\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F) \times \bar{\mathrm{V}}(E))]_{\mathrm{rs}}} \mathrm{e}^{-2\pi \cdot \mathrm{Tr}_{F\mathbb{Q}}(\bar{x},\bar{x})_{\bar{\mathrm{V}}}} \mathrm{Orb}(\bar{\boldsymbol{f}}^{\mathfrak{p}}, \bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}^{\mathfrak{p}}; \bar{\xi}, \bar{x}) \\
&\qquad \cdot \chi\left(\mathcal{O}_{\Gamma_{\bar{\xi}}} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{N}^2}} \mathcal{O}_{\Delta\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x})}\right)
\end{aligned}$$

after choosing a frame (Definition 5.20). Here, we define the orbital integral as

$$\mathrm{Orb}(\bar{\boldsymbol{f}}^{\mathfrak{p}}, \bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}^{\mathfrak{p}}; \bar{\xi}, \bar{x}) \coloneqq \int_{\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\mathfrak{p}})} \bar{\boldsymbol{f}}^{\mathfrak{p}}(\bar{g}^{-1}\bar{\xi}\bar{g})\bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}^{\mathfrak{p}}(\bar{g}^{-1}\bar{x})\,\mathrm{d}\bar{g},$$

where

- $\bar{\boldsymbol{f}}^{\mathfrak{p}} = \bar{\boldsymbol{f}}^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \otimes \bigotimes_{\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}} \setminus \{\mathfrak{p}\}} \bar{\boldsymbol{f}}_{\mathfrak{q}}$ *in which $\bar{\boldsymbol{f}}^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} = \boldsymbol{f}^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$ under the isomorphism $\iota_{\boldsymbol{P}}$* (C.13)*, and $\bar{\boldsymbol{f}}_{\mathfrak{q}} = \mathbb{1}_{\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}}$,*
- $\bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}^{\mathfrak{p}} = \bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \otimes \bigotimes_{\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}} \setminus \{\mathfrak{p}\}} \bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}_{\mathfrak{q}}$ *in which $\bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} = \boldsymbol{\phi}^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$ under the isomorphism $\iota_{\boldsymbol{P}}$, and $\bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}_{\mathfrak{q}} = \mathbb{1}_{\bar{\Lambda}_{\mathfrak{q}}}$,*
- $\mathrm{d}\bar{g}$ *is the Haar measure on $\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\mathfrak{p}})$ such that $\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}$ has volume* $\mathrm{vol}(K)$.

In particular, the Euler–Poincaré characteristic appearing in the formula is finite for every regular semisimple pair $(\bar{\xi}, \bar{x})$.

[15] Comparing the notations with those in Subsection 1.3, we have $(\boldsymbol{X}_k, \boldsymbol{i}_k, \boldsymbol{\lambda}_k) = (\boldsymbol{X}_n, \boldsymbol{i}_n, \boldsymbol{\lambda}_n)$, $\mathcal{N} = \mathcal{N}_n$, and $\bar{\mathrm{V}} \otimes_F F_{\mathfrak{p}} = \mathrm{V}_n^-$.

Proof. We choose a representative $x \in \mathrm{V}(E)^+$ in the coset $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F)\backslash\mathrm{V}(E)^+$. We first compute

$$(5.12)\qquad \sum_{g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}=(g^p,g_{\mathfrak{q}}|\mathfrak{q}\in\mathrm{Spl}_p)\in\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^x)(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})\backslash\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})/K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}} \phi^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}((g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})^{-1}x)\mathcal{Z}(x,g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})_K^{\mathrm{ss},\wedge},$$

where $\mathcal{Z}(x,g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})_K^{\mathrm{ss},\wedge}$ is the formal completion of $\mathcal{Z}(x,g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})_K^{\mathrm{nr}}$ along the supersingular locus. Let S be a connected scheme in $\mathrm{Sch}'_{/O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}$ on which p is locally nilpotent, and take a point $(A_0,i_0,\lambda_0,\eta_0^p;A,i,\lambda,\eta^p,\eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}}) \in \mathcal{Z}(x,g^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})_K^{\mathrm{ss},\wedge}(S)$. Then we can choose an element $\bar{x} \in \bar{\mathrm{V}}$ and an E-linear quasi-isogeny $\rho\colon A \to \boldsymbol{A}_k \times_k S$ over S such that

- the image of $\rho_*^{-1}\circ\bar{x}_*$ in $\mathrm{Hom}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_{0s},\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}),\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_s,\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}))$ belongs to $\eta^p((g^p)^{-1}x)$,
- the image of $\rho_*^{-1}\circ\bar{x}_*$ in $\prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\mathrm{Spl}_p}\mathrm{Hom}_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}}}(A_{0s}[(\mathfrak{q}^-)^\infty],A_s[(\mathfrak{q}^-)^\infty])\otimes_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}}} E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}$ belongs to $\eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}}((g_{\mathfrak{q}}^{-1}x)_{\mathfrak{q}\in\mathrm{Spl}_p})$,
- $\rho^{-1}\circ\bar{x}$ lifts to an O_E-linear homomorphism $A_0[\mathfrak{q}^\infty]\to A[\mathfrak{q}^\infty]$ for every $\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}$.

Here, we note that $(A_0,i_0,\lambda_0,\eta_0^p)$ is identified with the base change of $(\boldsymbol{A}_0,\boldsymbol{i}_0,\boldsymbol{\lambda}_0,\boldsymbol{\eta}_0^p)$ to S. By Proposition C.26, ρ is given by an element $\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}} \in \mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\mathfrak{p}})$ on S. In particular, we have $(\bar{x},\bar{x})_{\bar{\mathrm{V}}} = (x,x)_{\mathrm{V}}$. Choose a representative $\bar{x}$ in the coset $\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F)\backslash\bar{\mathrm{V}}(E)$ of this norm. Then under the isomorphism (5.11), we have

$$(5.12) = \sum_{\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}\in\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}}^{\bar{x}})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\mathfrak{p}})\backslash\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\mathfrak{p}})/\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}} \bar{\phi}^{\mathfrak{p}}((\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}})^{-1}\bar{x})\cdot[\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x}),\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}],$$

where $[\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x}),\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}]$ denotes the corresponding double coset in the right-hand side of (5.11).

By linearity, we may assume $\boldsymbol{f} = \mathbb{1}_{KhK}$ for some $h\in\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ with $h_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} = 1$. In particular, $\mathtt{T}_K^{\boldsymbol{f}} = \mathrm{vol}(K)\mathtt{T}_{KhK}$. By Proposition C.26, the formal completion of $\mathtt{T}_{KhK}$ in $(\mathcal{X}_K^{\mathrm{ss},\wedge})^2$ is simply the set-theoretical Hecke correspondence $\mathtt{T}_{\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{h}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}}$ under the isomorphism (5.11) by Proposition C.26, where $\bar{h}_{\mathfrak{q}}^{\mathfrak{p}} = 1$ for $\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}\backslash\{\mathfrak{p}\}$. We first analyze the intersection $\mathtt{T}_{\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{h}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}}\cap\Delta[\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x}),\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}]$. If the intersection is nonempty, then $[\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x}),\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{h}^{\mathfrak{p}}]$ and $[\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x}),\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}]$ are in the same connected component. By (5.11), there exists $\bar{\xi}\in\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F)$ such that $\bar{\xi}\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}} = \bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{h}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}$, that is, $\mathbb{1}_{KhK}((\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}})^{-1}\bar{\xi}\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}) = 1$. Moreover, if we fix a set of representatives of the orbits of $\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F)$ under conjugation, then one can always choose $\bar{\xi}$ to be one of the representatives. Now we think conversely, for any such representative $\bar{\xi}$, the cosets $\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}$ satisfying $\bar{\xi}\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}} = \bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{h}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}$ are those satisfying $\mathbb{1}_{KhK}((\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}})^{-1}\bar{\xi}\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}) = 1$. In this case, the intersection $\mathtt{T}_{\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{h}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}} \cap \Delta[\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x}), \bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}]$ is isomorphic to the image of $\Gamma_{\bar{\xi}} \cap \Delta\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x})$ under the quotient morphism $\mathcal{N}^2 \to (C\backslash\mathcal{N})^2$ for some subgroup $C \subseteq \mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F_{\mathfrak{p}})$ acting on $\mathcal{N}$ discretely.

Now we claim that $\Gamma_{\bar{\xi}} \cap \Delta\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x})$ is a proper scheme in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/k}$. By definition, we have $\bar{\xi}\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x}) = \mathcal{Z}(\bar{\xi}\bar{x})$. It follows that $\Gamma_{\bar{\xi}} \cap \Delta\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x})$ is isomorphic to a closed sub-formal scheme of $\bigcap_{i=0}^{n-1} \mathcal{Z}(\bar{\xi}^i\bar{x})$, whose underlying reduced scheme is a proper scheme in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/k}$ by [KR11, Theorem 4.12] for $F_{\mathfrak{p}} = \mathbb{Q}_p$ and [Cho] in general. Thus, the underlying reduced scheme of $\Gamma_{\bar{\xi}} \cap \Delta\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x})$ is of finite type over k. By the previous discussion, it suffices to show that $\mathtt{T}_{\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{h}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}} \cap \Delta[\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x}), \bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}]$ is a scheme of finite type over k. However, this follows from Lemma 5.24. As a consequence, $\chi\left(\mathcal{O}_{\Gamma_{\bar{\xi}}} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{N}^2}} \mathcal{O}_{\Delta\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x})}\right)$ is finite. Moreover, it is equal to $\chi\left(\mathcal{O}_{\mathtt{T}_{\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{h}^{\mathfrak{p}}\bar{K}^{\mathfrak{p}}}} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{N}^2}} \mathcal{O}_{\Delta[\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x}),\bar{g}^{\mathfrak{p}}]}\right)$. Therefore, the theorem follows from (5.12) and Lemma 5.24. ∎

Remark 5.26. We believe that a more general notion of *good inert prime*, for which a result similar to Theorem 5.25 holds, should just be a prime $\mathfrak{p}$ of F that is inert in E, and such that there is a self-dual lattice $\Lambda_{\mathfrak{p}} \subseteq \mathrm{V}(F_{\mathfrak{p}})$ satisfying

- $K = K^{\mathfrak{p}} \times K_{\mathfrak{p}}$ in which $K_{\mathfrak{p}}$ is the stabilizer of $\Lambda_{\mathfrak{p}}$,
- $\boldsymbol{f} = \boldsymbol{f}^{\mathfrak{p}} \otimes \boldsymbol{f}_{\mathfrak{p}}$ in which $\boldsymbol{f}_{\mathfrak{p}} = \mathbb{1}_{K_{\mathfrak{p}}}$,
- $\boldsymbol{\phi} = \boldsymbol{\phi}^{\mathfrak{p}} \otimes \boldsymbol{\phi}_{\mathfrak{p}}$ in which $\boldsymbol{\phi}_{\mathfrak{p}} = \mathbb{1}_{\Lambda_{\mathfrak{p}}}$.

In the formula for $\mathcal{I}_K(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi})_{\mathfrak{p}}$ in Theorem 5.25, the orbital integral has the decomposition

$$\mathrm{Orb}(\bar{\boldsymbol{f}}^{\mathfrak{p}}, \bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}^{\mathfrak{p}}; \bar{\xi}, \bar{x}) = \mathrm{Orb}(\bar{\boldsymbol{f}}^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}, \bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}; \bar{\xi}, \bar{x}) \cdot \prod_{\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}} \setminus \{\mathfrak{p}\}} \mathrm{Orb}(\mathbb{1}_{\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}}, \mathbb{1}_{\bar{\Lambda}_{\mathfrak{q}}}; \bar{\xi}, \bar{x}),$$

in which we decompose the Haar measure on $\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\mathfrak{p}})$ such that $\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}$ has volume 1 for every $\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}} \setminus \{\mathfrak{p}\}$.

We now compare the term

$$2\log|O_F/\mathfrak{p}| \cdot \prod_{\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}} \setminus \{\mathfrak{p}\}} \mathrm{Orb}(\mathbb{1}_{\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}}, \mathbb{1}_{\bar{\Lambda}_{\mathfrak{q}}}; \bar{\xi}, \bar{x}) \cdot \chi\left(\mathcal{O}_{\Gamma_{\bar{\xi}}} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{N}^2}} \mathcal{O}_{\Delta\mathcal{Z}(\bar{x})}\right)$$

with the orbital integrals on the general linear side. Recall the notations $\mathrm{Mat}_{r,s}$ and M_n from Subsection 1.7, and denote by S_n the O_F-subscheme of $\mathrm{Res}_{O_E/O_F} \mathrm{Mat}_{n,n}$ consisting of matrices g satisfying $g \cdot g^{\mathtt{c}} = \mathrm{I}_n$.

Definition 5.27 ([Liu14, Section 5.3][16])**.** Consider a field extension F'/F and put $E' \coloneqq E \otimes_F F'$.

(1) We say that a pair of elements $(\zeta, y) \in \mathrm{S}_n(F') \times \mathrm{M}_n(F')$ is *regular semisimple* if the matrix $(y_2\zeta^{i+j-2}y_1)_{i,j=1}^n$ is invertible in E', where we write $y = (y_1, y_2)$ for $y_1 \in \mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(F')$ and $y_2 \in \mathrm{Mat}_{1,n}(F')$.
(2) The group $\mathrm{GL}_n(F')$ acts on $\mathrm{S}_n(F') \times \mathrm{M}_n(F')$ via the formula $(\zeta, y_1, y_2).g = (g^{-1}\zeta g, g^{-1}y_1, y_2 g)$, which preserves regular semisimple pairs. Denote by $[\mathrm{S}_n(F') \times \mathrm{M}_n(F')]$ the orbits of $\mathrm{S}_n(F') \times \mathrm{M}_n(F')$ under the above action, and by $[\mathrm{S}_n(F') \times \mathrm{M}_n(F')]_{\mathrm{rs}}$ the subset of regular semisimple orbits.
(3) Suppose that $F' = F_v$ for some place v of F. For a regular semisimple pair $(\zeta, y) \in \mathrm{S}_n(F') \times \mathrm{M}_n(F')$, we define its *local transfer factor* to be $\omega_v(\zeta, y) \coloneqq \mu_{E/F}(\det(y_1, \zeta y_1, \dots, \zeta^{n-1}y_1))$. We denote by $[\mathrm{S}_n(F') \times \mathrm{M}_n(F')]_{\mathrm{rs}}^{\pm}$ the subset of $[\mathrm{S}_n(F') \times \mathrm{M}_n(F')]_{\mathrm{rs}}$ of orbits (ζ, y) such that $\mu_{E/F}(\det(y_2\zeta^{i+j-2}y_1)_{i,j=1}^n) = \pm 1$.
(4) We say that two regular semisimple orbits $(\zeta, y) \in [\mathrm{S}_n(F') \times \mathrm{M}_n(F')]_{\mathrm{rs}}$ and $(\bar{\xi}, \bar{x}) \in [\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F') \times \bar{\mathrm{V}}(E')]_{\mathrm{rs}}$ (Definition 5.14) *match* if
   - ζ and $\bar{\xi}$ have the same characteristic polynomial as elements in $\mathrm{Mat}_{n,n}(E')$,
   - $y_2\zeta^i y_1 = (\bar{\xi}^i\bar{x}, \bar{x})_{\bar{\mathrm{V}}}$ for $0 \leqslant i \leqslant n-1$.

Corollary 5.28. *In the situation of Theorem 5.25, suppose that for every orbit $(\bar{\xi}, \bar{x}) \in [\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F) \times \bar{\mathrm{V}}(E))]_{\mathrm{rs}}$, Conjecture 1.9(2) for $E_\mathfrak{q}/F_\mathfrak{q}$ for every $\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}} \setminus \{\mathfrak{p}\}$ and Conjecture 1.12 for $E_\mathfrak{p}/F_\mathfrak{p}$ hold. Then we have*

$$\begin{aligned}
&\mathcal{I}_K(\boldsymbol{f}, \boldsymbol{\phi})_\mathfrak{p} \\
&= -\sum_{(\bar{\xi},\bar{x}) \in [\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F) \times \bar{\mathrm{V}}(E))]_{\mathrm{rs}}} \mathrm{e}^{-2\pi \cdot \mathrm{Tr}_{F/\mathbb{Q}}(\bar{x},\bar{x})_{\bar{\mathrm{V}}}} \\
&\quad \mathrm{Orb}(\bar{\boldsymbol{f}}^\mathfrak{p}, \bar{\boldsymbol{\phi}}^\mathfrak{p}; \bar{\xi}, \bar{x}) \cdot \frac{\mathrm{d}}{\mathrm{d}s}\bigg|_{s=0} \left(\prod_{\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \omega_\mathfrak{q}(\zeta, y)\, \mathrm{Orb}(s; \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{S}_n(O_{F_\mathfrak{q}})}, \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{M}_n(O_{F_\mathfrak{q}})}; \zeta, y) \right),
\end{aligned}$$

where $(\zeta, y) \in [\mathrm{S}_n(F) \times \mathrm{M}_n(F)]_{\mathrm{rs}}$ is the unique orbit that matches $(\bar{\xi}, \bar{x})$.

Proof. It suffices to note that $\mathrm{Orb}(0; \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{S}_n(O_{F_\mathfrak{p}})}, \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{M}_n(O_{F_\mathfrak{p}})}; \zeta, y) = 0$, which is Conjecture 1.9(1) and is known (see Remark 1.10). □

[16] Note that we have changed the roles of rows and columns from [Liu14], in order to match the convention of generating series.

Remark 5.29. To obtain a global result, we would like to find test functions $\tilde{\boldsymbol{f}}^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$, $\tilde{\boldsymbol{\phi}}^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$ on the general linear side, in order to obtain some matching relation with the local intersection number $\mathcal{I}_K(\boldsymbol{f},\boldsymbol{\phi})_v$ at every place v of F. If v is split in E, then it is expected that $\mathcal{I}_K(\boldsymbol{f},\boldsymbol{\phi})_v$ vanishes, and the matching test functions $\tilde{\boldsymbol{f}}_v$, $\tilde{\boldsymbol{\phi}}_v$ are be obtained from $\boldsymbol{f}_v$, $\boldsymbol{\phi}_v$ by an elementary way as in [Liu14, Proposition 5.11]. If v is neither split nor a good inert prime, then we do not know what to do at this moment.

Appendix A. Proof of the arithmetic fundamental lemma in the minuscule case (by Chao Li and Yihang Zhu)

The purpose of this appendix is to prove the arithmetic fundamental lemma for $\mathrm{U}(n)\times\mathrm{U}(n)$, namely, Conjecture 1.12, in the minuscule case. We follow the setup and notation in Subsection 1.3.

A.1. Derivatives of orbital integrals via lattice counting

We take a regular semisimple orbit $(\zeta,y)\in[\mathrm{S}_n(F)\times\mathrm{M}_n(F)]^-_{\mathrm{rs}}$, where $y=(y_1,y_2)\in\mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(F)\times\mathrm{Mat}_{1,n}(F)$. Let $(\xi,x)\in[\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^-)(F)\times\mathrm{V}_n^-(E)]_{\mathrm{rs}}$ be the unique orbit that matches (ζ,y). By definition, ζ and ξ have the same characteristic polynomial; and we have

$$y_2\zeta^iy_1=(\xi^ix,x),\quad i=0,\dots,n-1. \tag{A.1}$$

Recall that we have put $v(\zeta,y):=\mathrm{val}(\det(y_1,\zeta y_1,\dots,\zeta^{n-1}y_1))$ and defined the transfer factor to be $\omega(\zeta,y):=(-1)^{v(\zeta,y)}$. We also put $\Delta(\zeta,y):=\det(y_2\zeta^{i+j-2}y_1)_{i,j=1}^n$ and $\delta(\zeta,y):=\mathrm{val}(\Delta(\zeta,y))$. As $(\zeta,y)\in[\mathrm{S}_n(F)\times\mathrm{M}_n(F)]^-_{\mathrm{rs}}$, we know that $\delta(\zeta,y)$ is odd.

Define two O_E-lattices

$$L_1=L_{\zeta,y_1}:=O_Ey_1\oplus O_E\zeta y_1\oplus\cdots\oplus O_E\zeta^{n-1}y_1\subseteq\mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(E),$$
$$L_2=L_{\zeta,y_2}:=O_Ey_2\oplus O_Ey_2\zeta\oplus\cdots\oplus O_Ey_2\zeta^{n-1}\subseteq\mathrm{Mat}_{1,n}(E).$$

For every integer $i\geqslant 0$, we define the set

$$M_i(\zeta,y):=\{O_E\text{-lattice }\Lambda\subseteq\mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(E)\mid L_1\subseteq\Lambda,L_2\subseteq\Lambda^\vee,\Lambda^{\mathtt{c}}=\Lambda,\zeta\Lambda=\Lambda,\ \mathrm{length}_{O_E}(\Lambda/L_1)=i\},$$

where $\vee$ denotes dual lattice under the standard sesquilinear form

$$\mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(E)\times\mathrm{Mat}_{1,n}(E)\to E,\quad (x_1,x_2)\mapsto x_2^{\mathtt{c}}\cdot x_1. \tag{A.2}$$

Lemma A.1. *We have*

$$\left.\frac{\mathrm{d}}{\mathrm{d}s}\right|_{s=0} \mathrm{Orb}(s; \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{S}_n(O_F)}, \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{M}_n(O_F)}; \zeta, y) = -2\log q \cdot \omega(\zeta, y) \sum_{i\geqslant 0} (-1)^i (v(\zeta, y) - i) \cdot \# M_i(\zeta, y).$$

Proof. By definition, we have

$$\mathrm{Orb}(s; \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{S}_n(O_F)}, \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{M}_n}(O_F); \zeta, y) = \int_{\mathrm{GL}_n(F)} \mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{S}_n(O_F)}(g^{-1}\zeta g)\mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{M}_n(O_F)}(g^{-1}y_1, y_2 g)\mu_{E/F}(\det g)|\det g|_E^s \mathrm{d}g.$$

Notice that $(g^{-1}y_1, y_2 g)$ belongs to $\mathrm{M}_n(O_F)$ if and only if $y_1 \in g\,\mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(O_F)$ and $y_2 \in \mathrm{Mat}_{1,n}(O_F)g^{-1}$ hold. We also notice that $g^{-1}\zeta g$ belongs to $\mathrm{S}_n(O_F)$ if and only if $\zeta g\,\mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(O_E) = g\,\mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(O_E)$ and $\mathrm{Mat}_{1,n}(O_E)g^{-1}\zeta = \mathrm{Mat}_{1,n}(O_E)g^{-1}$ hold. Moreover, the O_E-lattice $g\,\mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(O_E)$ is invariant under the involution c, and is dual to $\mathrm{Mat}_{1,n}(O_E)g^{-1}$ under the pairing (A.1). It follows that the assignment

$$g \mapsto \Lambda = \Lambda(g) \coloneqq g\,\mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(O_E)$$

induces a bijection between the set

$$\{g \in \mathrm{GL}_n(F)/\mathrm{GL}_n(O_F) \mid (g^{-1}y_1, y_2 g) \in \mathrm{M}_n(O_F), g^{-1}\zeta g \in \mathrm{S}_n(O_F)\},$$

and the set

$$\{O_E\text{-lattice } \Lambda \subseteq \mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(E) \mid y_1 \in \Lambda, y_2 \in \Lambda^\vee, \Lambda^{\mathsf{c}} = \Lambda, \zeta\Lambda = \Lambda, \}$$

in which the latter is equal to

$$\{O_E\text{-lattice } \Lambda \subseteq \mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(E) \mid L_1 \subseteq \Lambda, L_2 \subseteq \Lambda^\vee, \Lambda^{\mathsf{c}} = \Lambda, \zeta\Lambda = \Lambda\}.$$

It is clear that the above bijection further induces a bijection between such elements g with $\mathrm{val}(\det g) = i$ and such O_E-lattices Λ with $\mathrm{length}_{O_E}(\Lambda/L_1) = i$, namely, the set $M_i(\zeta, y)$. Now notice that we have

$$\mathrm{val}(\det g) = \mathrm{length}_{O_E}(\mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(O_E)/L_1) - \mathrm{length}_{O_E}(\Lambda/L_1)$$

and

$$\mathrm{length}_{O_E}(\mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(O_E)/L_1) = \mathrm{val}(\det(y_1, \zeta y_1, \ldots, \zeta^{n-1}y_1)) = v(\zeta, y).$$

It follows that if $\mathrm{length}_{O_E}(\Lambda/L_1)=i$, then we have

$$\mu_{E/F}(\det g)=(-1)^{v(\zeta,y)-i}=(-1)^i\cdot\omega(\zeta,y)$$

and

$$\frac{\mathrm{d}}{\mathrm{d}s}\bigg|_{s=0}|\det(g)|_E^s=-2\log q\cdot(v(\zeta,y)-i).$$

The lemma is proved. □

Define two isomorphisms of E-vector spaces

$$\phi_1\colon\ \mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(E)\to\mathrm{V}_n^-(E),\quad \zeta^iy_1\mapsto\xi^ix,\quad i=0,\dots,n-1,$$

and

$$\phi_2\colon\ \mathrm{Mat}_{1,n}(E)\to\mathrm{V}_n^-(E),\quad y_2\zeta^i\mapsto\xi^ix,\quad i=0,\dots,n-1.$$

By (A.1), the standard sesquilinear form (A.2) transfers to the hermitian form on $\mathrm{V}_n^-(E)$ under $\phi_1\times\phi_2$. It is clear that under ϕ_1, the unique F-linear involution $\mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(E)\to\mathrm{Mat}_{n,1}(E)$ sending $a\cdot\zeta^iy_1$ to $a^{\mathtt{c}}\cdot(\zeta^i)^{\mathtt{c}}y_1=a^{\mathtt{c}}\cdot\zeta^{-i}y_1$ for every $a\in E$ and $i=0,\dots,n-1$ transfers to the unique F-linear involution $\tau\colon\mathrm{V}_n^-(E)\to\mathrm{V}_n^-(E)$ satisfying $\tau(a\cdot\xi^ix)=a^{\mathtt{c}}\cdot\xi^{-i}x$ for every $a\in E$ and $i=0,\dots,n-1$.

Define the O_E-lattice

$$L=L_{\xi,x}\coloneqq O_Ex\oplus O_E\xi x\oplus\cdots\oplus O_E\xi^{n-1}x\subseteq\mathrm{V}_n^-(E).$$

Then we have $\phi_i(L(\zeta,y_i))=L$ for $i=1,2$. For every integer $i\geq 0$, we define $N_i(\zeta,y)$ to be the set

$$\{O_E\text{-lattice }\Lambda\subseteq\mathrm{V}_n^-(E)\mid L\subseteq\Lambda\subseteq L^*,\xi\Lambda=\Lambda,\Lambda^\tau=\Lambda,\mathrm{length}_{O_E}(\Lambda/L)=i\},$$

where $*$ denotes the dual lattice under the hermitian form on $\mathrm{V}_n^-(E)$.

Proposition A.2. *We have*

$$\frac{\mathrm{d}}{\mathrm{d}s}\bigg|_{s=0}\mathrm{Orb}(s;\mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{S}_n(O_F)},\mathbb{1}_{\mathrm{M}_n(O_F)};\zeta,y)=-2\log q\cdot\omega(\zeta,y)\sum_{i=0}^{\delta(\zeta,y)}(-1)^i(-i)\cdot\#N_i(\zeta,y).$$

Proof. Notice that the isomorphisms ϕ_1 and ϕ_2 induce a bijection between the sets $M_i(\zeta, y)$ and $N_i(\zeta, y)$ for every i. As $\mathrm{length}_{O_E}(L^*/L) = \delta(\zeta, y)$, we know that N_i is empty unless $0 \leq i \leq \delta(\zeta, y)$. Moreover, the assignment $\Lambda \mapsto \Lambda^*$ induces an isomorphism between $N_i(\zeta, y)$ and $N_{\delta(\zeta,y)-i}(\zeta, y)$. Since $\delta(\zeta, y)$ is odd, we have

$$\sum_{i=0}^{\delta(\zeta,y)} (-1)^i v(\zeta, y) = 0.$$

Thus, we have

$$\sum_{i=0}^{\delta(\zeta,y)} (-1)^i (v(\zeta, y) - i) \cdot \# M_i(\zeta, y) = \sum_{i=0}^{\delta(\zeta,y)} (-1)^i (-i) \cdot \# N_i(\zeta, y).$$

The proposition then follows from Lemma A.1. □

Remark A.3. There seems to be a sign error in [RTZ13, Corollary 7.3(2)], which is corrected in the more general Proposition A.2.

A.2. The minuscule case

Choose a uniformizer ϖ of F. From now on we assume that (ξ, x) is *minuscule*, namely, we assume

$$\varpi L^* \subseteq L \subseteq L^*,$$

where $L = L_{\xi,x}$ as we recall. In this case, L^*/L is a vector space over the residue field $\kappa_E \cong \mathbb{F}_{q^2}$ of E, which is equipped with an hermitian form induced from V_n^-. Since $\xi \in \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_n^-)(F)$ stabilizes L and L^*, we know that ξ induces an action $\bar{\xi}$ on L^*/L, which is an element in $\mathrm{U}(L^*/L)$. We denote by $P(T)$ the characteristic polynomial of $\bar{\xi}$ on L^*/L. Since $\bar{\xi}$ belongs to $\mathrm{U}(L^*/L)$, we know that $P(T)$ is *self-reciprocal.* Here we recall that for a polynomial

$$R(T) = a_k T^k + \cdots + a_1 T + a_0 \in \kappa_E[T]$$

with $a_0 a_k \neq 0$, we define its *reciprocal polynomial* as

$$R^*(T) \coloneqq (a_0^{\mathsf{c}})^{-1} \cdot T^k \cdot R(1/T)^{\mathsf{c}};$$

and we say that $R(T)$ is *self-reciprocal* if $R(T) = R^*(T)$.

Now for every irreducible factor $R(T)$ of $P(T)$, for $P(T)$ defined above, we denote the multiplicity of $R(T)$ in $P(T)$ by $m(R(T))$. Since $P(T)$ is self-reciprocal, if $R(T)$ is an irreducible factor of $P(T)$, then $R^*(T)$ is also an irreducible factor of $P(T)$. Thus, taking reciprocal $R(T) \mapsto R^*(T)$ induces an involution on the set of irreducible factors of $P(T)$. We denote by NSR the set of all orbits of *non-self-reciprocal* monic irreducible factors of $P(T)$ under this involution.

Lemma A.4. *If $P(T)$ has a unique self-reciprocal monic irreducible factor $Q(T)$ such that $m(Q(T))$ is odd, then*

$$\sum_{i=0}^{\delta(\zeta,y)} (-1)^i(-i)\cdot \#N_i(\zeta,y) = \deg Q(T)\cdot \frac{m(Q(T))+1}{2}\cdot \prod_{\{R(T),R^*(T)\}\in\mathsf{NSR}} (1+m(R(T))).$$

Otherwise, we have

$$\sum_{i=0}^{\delta(\zeta,y)} (-1)^i(-i)\cdot \#N_i(\zeta,y) = 0.$$

Proof. This follows from the same proof as [RTZ13, Proposition 8.2]. □

Put $\Lambda := L^*$. Since (ξ, x) is minuscule, we know that Λ is a vertex lattice, namely, it satisfies $\varpi\Lambda \subseteq \Lambda^* \subseteq \Lambda$. Let $\mathcal{V}(\Lambda)$ be the Deligne–Lusztig variety associated to the vertex lattice Λ as in [LZ17, Section 2.5] and [RTZ13, Section 3], which is a smooth projective variety over k, where k is the residue field of $\breve{E}$ as in Subsection 1.3.

Lemma A.5. *We have a canonical isomorphism*

$$\Gamma_\xi \cap \Delta\mathcal{Z}_n(x) \cong \mathcal{V}(\Lambda)^{\bar{\xi}}$$

of k-schemes.

Proof. Notice that we have a canonical isomorphism $\Gamma_\xi \cap \Delta\mathcal{Z}_n(x) \cong \mathcal{Z}_n(x) \cap \mathcal{N}_n^\xi$. Let $\mathcal{N}_\Lambda \subseteq \mathcal{N}_n$ be the closed Bruhat–Tits stratum associated to the vertex lattice Λ as in [LZ17, Section 2.6]. Then by definition, we have

$$\mathcal{Z}_n(x) \cap \mathcal{N}_n^\xi \cong \mathcal{N}_\Lambda^\xi.$$

By [LZ17, Corollary 3.2.3 & Section 2.6], we have $\mathcal{N}_\Lambda \cong \mathcal{V}(\Lambda)$. The lemma then follows. □

Lemma A.6. *We have that $\mathcal{V}(\Lambda)^{\bar{\xi}}$ is empty unless $P(T)$ has a unique self-reciprocal monic irreducible factor $Q(T)$ such that $m(Q(T))$ is odd. Assume that $\mathcal{V}(\Lambda)^{\bar{\xi}}$ is non-empty. Then $\mathcal{V}(\Lambda)^{\bar{\xi}}$ is an Artinian k-scheme, and*

$$\begin{aligned}\chi(\mathcal{O}_{\Gamma_\xi} \otimes^{\mathbb{L}}_{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{N}_n^2}} \mathcal{O}_{\Delta \mathcal{Z}_n(x)})\\ &= \operatorname{length}_k \mathcal{V}(\Lambda)^{\bar{\xi}} \\ &= \deg Q(T) \cdot \frac{m(Q(T))+1}{2} \cdot \prod_{\{R(T),R^*(T)\}\in \mathsf{NSR}} (1+m(R(T))).\end{aligned}$$

Proof. The result follows directly from Lemma A.5, [LZ17, Corollary 3.2.3], [RTZ13, Proposition 8.1], and [HLZ19, Lemma 5.1.1 & Theorem 4.6.3]. Strictly speaking, these references assume $F=\mathbb{Q}_p$, but the same proof works for general F as long as one replaces the results related to the Bruhat–Tits stratification and special cycles by the more general ones in [Cho]. □

Theorem A.7. *Conjecture 1.12 holds when (ξ, x) is minuscule.*

Proof. This follows immediately from Proposition A.2, Lemma A.4, and Lemma A.6. □

Appendix B. Poles of Eisenstein series and theta lifting for unitary groups

In this appendix, we prove some results about global theta lifting for unitary groups, namely, Theorem B.4 and its two corollaries. These results are only used in the proof of Proposition 4.13. Thus, if the readers are willing to admit these results from the theory of automorphic forms, they are welcome to skip the entire section except the very short Subsection B.1 where we introduce some notation for the discrete automorphic spectrum.

B.1. Discrete automorphic spectrum

We recall some setup about the discrete automorphic spectrum.

Let G be a reductive group over a number field F. Let Z_{G} be the center of G. For an automorphic character $\chi\colon Z_{\mathrm{G}}(F)\backslash Z_{\mathrm{G}}(\mathbf{A}_F) \to \mathbb{C}^\times$, we denote by $\mathrm{L}^2(\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F), \chi)$ the space of measurable complex valued functions f on $\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)$ satisfying $f(gz)=\chi(z)f(g)$ for $z\in Z_{\mathrm{G}}(\mathbf{A}_F)$ and such that $|f(g)\chi'(g)|^2$ is integrable on $\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)/Z_{\mathrm{G}}(\mathbf{A}_F)$ for some (hence every) character $\chi'\colon \mathrm{G}(F)\backslash \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F) \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ such that $\chi\cdot(\chi' \mid Z_{\mathrm{G}}(\mathbf{A}_F))$ is unitary. The group $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)$ acts on $\mathrm{L}^2(\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F), \chi)$ by the right translation. Denote by $\mathrm{L}^2_{\mathrm{disc}}(\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F), \chi)$ the maximal closed subspace of

$L^2(G(F)\backslash G(\mathbf{A}_F),\chi)$ that is a direct sum of irreducible (closed) subrepresentations of $G(\mathbf{A}_F)$. We put

$$L^2_{\mathrm{disc}}(G) \coloneqq \bigoplus_{\chi} L^2_{\mathrm{disc}}(G(F)\backslash G(\mathbf{A}_F),\chi),$$

where χ runs through all automorphic characters of $Z_G(\mathbf{A}_F)$. Finally, denote by $L^2_{\mathrm{cusp}}(G)$ the subspace of $L^2_{\mathrm{disc}}(G)$ consisting of cuspidal functions. Both $L^2_{\mathrm{disc}}(G)$ and $L^2_{\mathrm{cusp}}(G)$ are representations of $G(\mathbf{A}_F)$ by the right translation.

Definition B.1. Let π be an irreducible admissible representation of $G(\mathbf{A}_F)$.

(1) We define the *discrete (resp. cuspidal) multiplicity* $m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi)$ (resp. $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi)$) of π to be the dimension of $\mathrm{Hom}_{G(\mathbf{A}_F)}(\pi, L^2_{\mathrm{disc}}(G))$ (resp. $\mathrm{Hom}_{G(\mathbf{A}_F)}(\pi, L^2_{\mathrm{cusp}}(G))$).
(2) We define a *discrete (resp. cuspidal) realization* of π to be an irreducible subrepresentation V_π contained in $L^2_{\mathrm{disc}}(G)$ (resp. $L^2_{\mathrm{cusp}}(G)$) that is isomorphic to π.

It is known that $0 \leqslant m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi) \leqslant m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi) < \infty$.

B.2. Main theorem and consequences

Now we let F be a totally real number field, and E/F a totally imaginary quadratic extension. Denote by c the nontrivial involution of E over F.

Definition B.2. We say that an automorphic character $\mu\colon E^\times\backslash\mathbf{A}_E^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ is *strictly unitary* if μ_∞ takes value 1 on the diagonal $\Delta^{[F:\mathbb{Q}]}\mathbb{R}^\times_{>0} \subseteq (\mathbb{R}^\times_{>0})^{[F:\mathbb{Q}]}$ as a subgroup of $E^\times_\infty \subseteq \mathbf{A}_E^\infty$.

Remark B.3. It is clear that a strictly unitary automorphic character is unitary. For every automorphic character μ of $\mathbf{A}_E^\times$, there exists a unique complex number s such that $\mu|\ |_E^s$ is strictly unitary.

Let $V, (\ ,\ )_V$ be a (non-degenerate) hermitian space over E (with respect to c) of rank n and let $W, \langle\ ,\ \rangle_W$ be a (non-degenerate) skew-hermitian space over E (with respect to c) of rank m. Let $G \coloneqq U(V)$ and $H \coloneqq U(W)$ be the unitary groups of V and W, respectively. We form the symplectic space $\mathrm{Res}_{E/F} V \otimes_E W$, and let $\mathrm{Mp}(\mathrm{Res}_{E/F} V \otimes_E W)$ be the metaplectic cover of $\mathrm{Sp}(\mathrm{Res}_{E/F} V \otimes_E W)(\mathbf{A}_F)$ with center $\mathbb{C}^1$. Then we have the oscillator representation ω of $\mathrm{Mp}(\mathrm{Res}_{E/F} V \otimes_E W)$ with respect to the standard additive character ψ_F.[17] Let $\underline{\mu} = (\mu_V, \mu_W)$ be a pair of splitting characters for

[17] In this article, we will always use ψ_F to form oscillator representations. Thus, in the sequel, we will no longer mention the dependence of ψ_F when discussing oscillator representations.

(V,W), that is, $(\mu_{\mathrm{V}},\mu_{\mathrm{W}})$ is a pair of automorphic characters of $\mathbf{A}_E^\times$ satisfying $\mu_{\mathrm{V}} \mid \mathbf{A}_F^\times = \mu_{E/F}^m$ and $\mu_{\mathrm{W}} \mid \mathbf{A}_F^\times = \mu_{E/F}^n$. Then it induces an embedding $\iota_{\underline{\mu}}\colon \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)\times\mathrm{H}(\mathbf{A}_F) \hookrightarrow \mathrm{Mp}(\mathrm{Res}_{E/F}\mathrm{V}\otimes_E\mathrm{W})$. By restriction, we obtain the Weil representation

$$\omega_{\underline{\mu}}^{\mathrm{V},\mathrm{W}} := \omega\circ\iota_{\underline{\mu}} \tag{B.1}$$

of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)\times\mathrm{H}(\mathbf{A}_F)$. It induces the global theta lifting map $\Theta_{\underline{\mu},\mathrm{V}}^{\mathrm{W}}$: For an irreducible smooth subrepresentation $V\subseteq \mathrm{L}^2_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\mathrm{G})$ of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)$, we obtain a subrepresentation $\Theta_{\underline{\mu},\mathrm{V}}^{\mathrm{W}}(V)\subseteq \mathscr{C}^\infty(\mathrm{H}(F)\backslash\mathrm{H}(\mathbf{A}_F),\mathbb{C})$ of $\mathrm{H}(\mathbf{A}_F)$. More precisely, there is a space of theta functions $\theta_{\underline{\mu}}(g,h)$ on $\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)\times\mathrm{H}(F)\backslash\mathrm{H}(\mathbf{A}_F)$, which is an automorphic realization of $\omega_{\underline{\mu}}^{\mathrm{V},\mathrm{W}}$. Then $\Theta_{\underline{\mu},\mathrm{V}}^{\mathrm{W}}(V)$ is spanned by functions

$$h\mapsto \int_{\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \theta_{\underline{\mu}}(g,h)f(g)dg$$

on $\mathrm{H}(F)\backslash\mathrm{H}(\mathbf{A}_F)$ for $f\in V$. Similarly, we have the reverse global theta lifting map $\Theta_{\underline{\mu},\mathrm{W}}^{\mathrm{V}}$.

We consider an automorphic representation π of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)$ and a strictly unitary automorphic character $\mu\colon E^\times\backslash\mathbf{A}_E^\times\to\mathbb{C}^\times$. We study three objects associated to π and μ as follows.

- Let S be a finite set of places of F containing all archimedean ones and such that for $v\notin S$, both π_v and μ_v are unramified. We then have the partial standard L-function $L^S(s,\pi\times\mu)$.
- Let G_1 be the unitary group of the hermitian space $\mathrm{V}_1:=\mathrm{V}\oplus\mathrm{D}$, where D is the hyperbolic hermitian plane, let Q be a parabolic subgroup of G_1 stabilizing an isotropic line in D, and let $\mathbf{K}\subseteq\mathrm{G}_1(\mathbf{A}_F)$ be a maximal compact subgroup such that the Cartan decomposition $\mathrm{G}_1(\mathbf{A}_F)=\mathrm{Q}(\mathbf{A}_F)\mathbf{K}$ holds. Let V_π be a cuspidal realization of π (Definition B.1). Let $\mathrm{I}(V_\pi\boxtimes\mu^{\mathsf{c}})$ be the space of functions f on $\mathrm{G}_1(\mathbf{A}_F)$ such that for every $k\in\mathbf{K}$ the function $p\mapsto f(pk)$ is a $\mathbf{K}\cap\mathrm{Q}(\mathbf{A}_F)$-finite vector in $V_\pi\boxtimes(\mu^{\mathsf{c}}\cdot|\ |_E^{(n+1)/2})$.[18] For every $f\in\mathrm{I}(V_\pi\boxtimes\mu^{\mathsf{c}})$, we can form an Eisenstein series $\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{Q}}(g;f_s)$ normalized such that $\mathrm{Re}(s)=0$ is the unitary line (see [Sha88, Section 2] for details). By Langlands theory of Eisenstein series [Lan71, MW95], $\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{Q}}(g;f_s)$ is absolutely convergent for $\mathrm{Re}(s)>\frac{n+1}{2}$ and has a meromorphic continuation to the entire complex plane.

[18]Here, we regard vectors in $V_\pi\boxtimes(\mu^{\mathsf{c}}\cdot|\ |_E^{(n+1)/2})$ as functions on $\mathrm{Q}(\mathbf{A}_F)$ via the Levi quotient map.

- Let V_π be a cuspidal realization of π (Definition B.1). Then we have the global theta lifting $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi)$. We will adopt the convention that if $\mu \mid \mathbf{A}_F^\times \neq \mu_{E/F}^m$ with $m := \dim_E \mathrm{W}$, then $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi) = 0$.

We have the following theorem, which is the unitary version of a weaker form of [GJS09, Theorem 1.1].

Theorem B.4. *Let π be an irreducible admissible representation of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)$, let V_π be a cuspidal realization of π (Definition B.1), and let $\mu\colon E^\times\backslash\mathbf{A}_E^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ be a strictly unitary automorphic character. We have*

(1) For $s_0 \in \mathbb{C}$ with $\mathrm{Re}(s_0) > 0$, consider the following statements:

(a) $L^S(s,\pi\times\mu)\cdot L^S(2s,\mu,\mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n})$ has a pole at s_0, where $\mathrm{As}^\pm$ stand for the two Asai representations (see, for example, [GGP12a, Section 7]).

(b) $\{\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{Q}}(g;f_s) \mid f \in \mathrm{I}(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathtt{c}})\}$ has a pole at $s_0 + j$ for some integer $j \geqslant 0$.

(c) $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi) \neq 0$ for some skew-hermitian space W of dimension $n+1-2s_0$ and some ν with $\nu \mid \mathbf{A}_F^\times = \mu_{E/F}^n$.[19]

Then (a) $\Rightarrow$ (b) $\Rightarrow$ (c).

(2) The skew-hermitian space W in (1c) is unique up to isomorphism.

We will prove the theorem in Subsection B.3.

Corollary B.5. *Denote the set of poles of $L^S(s,\pi\times\mu)\cdot L^S(2s,\mu,\mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n})$ in the region $\mathrm{Re}(s) > 0$ by $\mathrm{Pol}^S_{\pi,\mu}$. Then*

(1) If μ is not conjugate self-dual, then $\mathrm{Pol}^S_{\pi,\mu}$ is empty.

(2) If μ is conjugate orthogonal (Definition 4.1), then $\mathrm{Pol}^S_{\pi,\mu}$ is contained in the set $\{\frac{n+1}{2}, \frac{n-1}{2}, \dots, \frac{n+1}{2} - \lfloor\frac{n}{2}\rfloor\}$.

(3) If μ is conjugate symplectic (Definition 4.1), then $\mathrm{Pol}^S_{\pi,\mu}$ is contained in the set $\{\frac{n}{2}, \frac{n-2}{2}, \dots, \frac{n}{2} - \lfloor\frac{n-1}{2}\rfloor\}$.

Proof. This is a direct consequence of Theorem B.4. □

Let V_π be a cuspidal realization of π, and suppose that $\{\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{Q}}(g;f_s) \mid f \in \mathrm{I}(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathtt{c}})\}$ has the largest pole at $s_{\max}$. By Theorem B.4, there is a skew-hermitian space W of dimension $n+1-2s_{\max}$, unique up to isomorphism, such that $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi)$ is nonzero.

[19] This property is independent of the choice of such ν since changing ν results in a twist of $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi)$ by a character.

Corollary B.6. *Let the notation be as above. Suppose that* $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi)$ *is cuspidal. Then*

(1) The space $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi)$ *is an irreducible representation of* $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{W})(\mathbf{A}_F)$*; and*

$$V_\pi = \Theta^{\mathrm{V}}_{(\mu^{-1},\nu^{-1}),-\mathrm{W}}(\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi)), \tag{B.2}$$

where $-\mathrm{W}, \langle\ ,\ \rangle_{-\mathrm{W}}$ *denotes the skew-hermitian space* $\mathrm{W}, -\langle\ ,\ \rangle_{\mathrm{W}}$*, and we naturally identify* $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{W})$ *with* $\mathrm{U}(-\mathrm{W})$*.*

(2) The space $\mathscr{R}_{s_{\max}}(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$ *generated by residues of* $\{\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{Q}}(g; f_s) \mid f \in \mathrm{I}(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathsf{c}})\}$ *at* $s = s_{\max}$ *is an irreducible representation of* $\mathrm{G}_1(\mathbf{A}_F)$*; and*

$$\mathscr{R}_{s_{\max}}(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathsf{c}}) = \Theta^{\mathrm{V}_1}_{(\mu^{-1},\nu^{-1}),-\mathrm{W}}(\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi)). \tag{B.3}$$

(3) In the situation of (1) (resp. (2)), let π_{W} *(resp.* π_1*) be the underlying (irreducible) representation of* $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi)$ *(resp.* $\mathscr{R}_{s_{\max}}(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$*). If* π_{W} *has a unique realization as a subquotient in the space of automorphic forms on* $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{W})$*, then* $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi) = 1$ *(resp.* $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi_1) = 0$*).*

Proof. Put $m := n + 1 - 2s_{\max}$ for simplicity.

For (1), the irreducibility follows from [Wu13, Theorem 5.3], and (B.2) follows from [Wu13, Theorem 5.1].

For (2), since the space generated by the constant terms of forms in $\mathscr{R}_{s_{\max}}(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$ is an irreducible representation of $\mathrm{M}_{\mathrm{Q}}(\mathbf{A}_F)$, where M_{Q} is the Levi quotient of Q, the space $\mathscr{R}_{s_{\max}}(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$ is an irreducible representation of $\mathrm{G}_1(\mathbf{A})$. Then (B.3) follows from [Wu13, Proposition 5.9].

For (3), we first study $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi)$. Let V'_π be an arbitrary cuspidal realization of π. By Theorem B.4, there exists a skew-hermitian space W' of the same dimension m such that $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}'}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V'_\pi) \neq 0$. As $m \leqslant n$, by the local theta dichotomy [SZ15, Theorem 1.10],[20] we have $\mathrm{W}' \simeq \mathrm{W}$. By the Howe duality [GT16, Theorem 1.2], the underlying representation of $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}'}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V'_\pi)$ must be isomorphic to a finite sum of π_{W}. Then the assumption of π_{W} implies $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi) = \Theta^{\mathrm{W}'}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V'_\pi)$. Thus, $V_\pi = V'_\pi$ by [Wu13, Theorem 5.1]. In particular, $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi) = 1$.

Then we study $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi_1)$. Let V_{π_1} be a cuspidal realization of π_1. By the identity $L^S(s, \pi_1) = L^S(s, \pi) \cdot L^S(s - s_{\max}, \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$, we know that $L^S(s, \pi_1 \times \mu)$ has a pole at $s_{\max} + 1$. By Theorem B.4, there exists a skew-hermitian space

[20] At a nonarchimedean place, the local theta dichotomy is also proved in [GG11].

W_1 of dimension $(n+2)+1-2(s_{\max}+1)=m$ such that $\Theta^{W_1}_{(\mu,\nu),V_1}(V_{\pi_1})\neq 0$. Again by the local theta dichotomy and the Howe correspondence, we have $W_1\simeq W$ and that the underlying representation of $\Theta^{W_1}_{(\mu,\nu),V}(V_{\pi_1})$ must be isomorphic to a finite sum of π_W. Then the assumption of π_W implies $\Theta^{W_1}_{(\mu,\nu),V_1}(V_{\pi_1})=\Theta^{W}_{(\mu,\nu),V}(V_\pi)$. Thus, $V_{\pi_1}=\Theta^{V_1}_{(\mu^{-1},\nu^{-1}),-W}(\Theta^{W}_{(\mu,\nu),V}(V_\pi))$ by [Wu13, Theorem 5.1], which is simply $\mathscr{R}_{s_{\max}}(V_\pi\boxtimes\mu)$ by (B.3). This is a contradiction. Therefore, $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi_1)=0$. □

Remark B.7. In fact, in Corollary B.6, the space $\Theta^{W}_{(\mu,\nu),V}(V_\pi)$ is always cuspidal, which follows from an analogous statement of [GJS09, Theorem 5.1], whose proof can be adopted to the unitary case as well. Since we do not need this fact, we will leave the details to interested readers as an exercise.

B.3. Proof of Theorem B.4

We follow the strategy in [GJS09]. We first prove the following proposition, which is a part of Theorem B.4.

Proposition B.8. *Suppose that $\mu^{\mathtt{c}}=\mu^{-1}$. Let s_1 be the maximal positive real pole of $\{\mathscr{E}_Q(g;f_s)\mid f\in I(V_\pi\boxtimes\mu^{\mathtt{c}})\}$. Then*

(1) There is some skew-hermitian space W *of dimension $n+1-2s_1$ such that $\Theta^{W}_{(\mu,\nu),V}(V_\pi)\neq 0$.*
(2) All other positive real poles of $\mathscr{E}_Q(g;f_s)$ have the form s_1-j for some integer $j\geqslant 0$.

Part (1) of this proposition is the unitary version of [GJS09, Theorem 3.1]. The proof is very similar to the argument in [Mœg97, Section 2.1] and [GJS09, Section 3], which are for orthogonal groups. We will only sketch the proof with necessary modification for the unitary case.

We first introduce some notation. Fix a polarization $D=\delta^+\oplus\delta^-$ of the hyperbolic hermitian plane D. For an integer $a\geqslant 0$, put $\delta^{\pm}_a:=(\delta^{\pm})^{\oplus a}$ and $V_a:=V\oplus(\delta^+_a\oplus\delta^-_a)$. Put $G_a:=U(V_a)$ and let $Q_a\subseteq G_a$ be the parabolic subgroup stabilizing the subspace δ^+_a. In particular, we may identify Q_1 with Q. Note that the Levi quotient of Q_a is isomorphic to $G\times\mathrm{Res}_{E/F}\mathrm{GL}_a$. In particular, we have the space of functions $V_\pi\boxtimes(\mu^{\mathtt{c}}\cdot|\ |_E^{(n+a)/2})\circ\det_a$ on $Q_a(\mathbf{A}_F)$, where $\det_a\colon \mathrm{GL}_a\to\mathbb{G}_m$ is the determinant map. Similar to $I(V_\pi\boxtimes\mu^{\mathtt{c}})$, we have the space $I_a(V_\pi\boxtimes\mu^{\mathtt{c}})$ of functions on $G_a(\mathbf{A}_F)$; and for $f_a\in I_a(V_\pi\boxtimes\mu^{\mathtt{c}})$, one can form the Eisenstein series $\mathscr{E}_{Q_a}(\ ;f_{a,s})$ on $G_a(\mathbf{A}_F)$, which is absolutely convergent for $\mathrm{Re}(s)>\frac{n+a}{2}$. In particular, $I_1(V_\pi\boxtimes\mu^{\mathtt{c}})=I(V_\pi\boxtimes\mu^{\mathtt{c}})$. Let $\mathrm{Pol}_a(V_\pi\boxtimes\mu^{\mathtt{c}})$ be the set of positive real poles of $\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{Q}_a}(\quad; f_{a,s})$. Then s_1 is the largest number in $\mathrm{Pol}_1(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$ by our assumption.

Lemma B.9. *Let s_0 be an element in $\mathrm{Pol}_1(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$ such that $s_0 + j \notin \mathrm{Pol}_1(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$ for every integer $j > 0$. Then $s_0 + \frac{a-1}{2}$ lies in $\mathrm{Pol}_a(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$.*

Proof. This is the unitary analogue of [Mœg97, Remarque 1.1] and [GJS09, Proposition 1.1]. The argument for [Mœg97, Remarque 1.1] works in the unitary case as well. However, we would like to remark that in [Mœg97, Remarque 1.1], the author assumes that s_0 is the maximal element of $\mathrm{Pol}_1(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$. This is unnecessary since the argument only uses the fact that $s_0 + j \notin \mathrm{Pol}_1(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$ for every integer $j > 0$. □

Now we recall the generalized doubling method for unitary groups. Again let $-\mathrm{V}$ be the hermitian space with the negative hermitian form on V. Let $\mathrm{V}^\diamond$ be the doubling space $\mathrm{V} \oplus (-\mathrm{V})$. For an integer $a \geqslant 0$, put

$$\mathrm{V}_a^\diamond \coloneqq \mathrm{V}^\diamond \oplus (\delta_a^+ \oplus \delta_a^-) = \mathrm{V}_a \oplus (-\mathrm{V}).$$

Via this decomposition, we have a canonical embedding

$$\iota\colon \mathrm{G}_a \times \mathrm{G} \to \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_a^\diamond),$$

where we have identified G with $\mathrm{U}(-\mathrm{V})$. Put $\mathrm{V}^\pm \coloneqq \{(v, \pm v) \in \mathrm{V}^\diamond \mid v \in \mathrm{V}\}$ and $\mathrm{V}_a^\pm \coloneqq \mathrm{V}^\pm \oplus \delta_a^\pm$. Let P_a be the parabolic subgroup of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_a^\diamond)$ stabilizing the maximal totally isotropic subspace V_a^+ of $\mathrm{V}_a^\diamond$. Then the Levi quotient of P_a is isomorphic to $\mathrm{Res}_{E/F}\,\mathrm{GL}_{n+a}$. We have the space of degenerate series $\mathrm{J}_a(s, \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$ as the normalized induced representation $\mathrm{Ind}_{\mathrm{P}_a(\mathbf{A}_F)}^{\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_a^\diamond)(\mathbf{A}_F)}(\mu^{\mathsf{c}} \cdot |\ |^s) \circ \det_{n+a}$. Let $f_{a,s}^\diamond$ be a standard section in $\mathrm{J}_a(s, \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$. Then we can form the Siegel–hermitian Eisenstein series $\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{P}_a}(\quad; f_{a,s}^\diamond)$ on $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_a^\diamond)(\mathbf{A}_F)$, which is absolutely convergent for $\mathrm{Re}(s) > \frac{n+a}{2}$. See [Tan99, Section 1] for more details.

Now for a standard section $f_{a,s}^\diamond \in \mathrm{J}_a(s, \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$ and a cusp form $\phi \in V_\pi$, we have the function

$$f_{a,s}^{\diamond;\phi}(g') \coloneqq \int_{\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} f_{a,s}^\diamond(\iota(g^{-1}g', 1))\phi(g)\mathrm{d}g \tag{B.4}$$

on $\mathrm{G}_a(\mathbf{A}_F)$. The following lemma is analogous to [GJS09, Proposition 3.2].

Lemma B.10. *Suppose that $\mu \mid \mathbf{A}_F^\times = \mu_{E/F}^i$ for $i \in \{0, 1\}$. We have*

(1) *The poles of the Siegel–hermitian Eisenstein series* $\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{P}_a}(\ ;f^{\diamond}_{a,s})$ *in the region* $\mathrm{Re}(s) > 0$ *are all simple, and are contained in the set* $\{\frac{n+a-i}{2}, \frac{n+a-i}{2} - 1, \dots\}$.
(2) *The integral* (B.4) *is absolutely convergent for* $\mathrm{Re}(s) > \frac{n+a}{2}$.
(3) *The function* $f^{\diamond,\phi}_{a,s}$ *has a meromorphic continuation to the entire complex plane, whose poles in the region* $\mathrm{Re}(s) > 0$ *are contained in the set* $\{\frac{n-i}{2}, \frac{n-i}{2} - 1, \dots\}$.
(4) *If* s *is not a pole of* $f^{\diamond,\phi}_{a,s}$, *then* $f^{\diamond,\phi}_{a,s}$ *is a section in the normalized induced representation* $\mathrm{Ind}^{\mathrm{G}_a(\mathbf{A}_F)}_{\mathrm{Q}_a(\mathbf{A}_F)} V_\pi \boxtimes (\mu^{\mathsf{c}} \cdot |\ |^s_E) \circ \det_a$.

Proof. Part (1) follows from Main Theorem of [Tan99]. The proof of (2–4) is same as in [Mœg97, Section 2.1]. In particular, the poles of $f^{\diamond,\phi}_{a,s}$ are contained in the set of poles of the Eisenstein series $\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{P}_0}(g; f_s|\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F))$. Thus, (3) follows from Main Theorem of [Tan99]. □

The following lemma is analogous to [Mœg97, Proposition 2.1] and [GJS09, Proposition 3.3].

Lemma B.11. *For a standard section* $f^{\diamond}_{a,s} \in \mathrm{J}_a(s, \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$ *and a cusp form* $\phi \in V_\pi$, *we have the identity*

$$\int_{\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{P}_a}(\iota(g', g); f^{\diamond}_{a,s})\phi(g)\mu(\det g)\mathrm{d}g = \mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{Q}_a}(g'; f^{\diamond,\phi}_{a,s})$$

for $g' \in \mathrm{G}_a(\mathbf{A}_F)$, *as meromorphic functions in* s *away from the poles of* $f^{\diamond,\phi}_{a,s}$.

Proof. The proof is almost same to the argument on [Mœg97, p. 214–215]. We will sketch the process. To ease notation, we identify $\mathrm{G}_a \times \mathrm{G}$ as a subgroup of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^{\diamond}_a)$ via ι. We consider the double coset

$$\mathrm{P}_a(F)\backslash\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^{\diamond}_a)(F)/\mathrm{G}_a(F) \times \mathrm{G}(F). \tag{B.5}$$

We identify $\mathrm{P}_a(F)\backslash\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^{\diamond}_a)(F)$ with the set of maximal isotropic subspaces of $\mathrm{V}^{\diamond}_a$. Let L be such a subspace. Put $d_L := \dim_E(L \cap (-\mathrm{V}))$. Then L and L' are in the same double coset of (B.5) if and only if $d_L = d_{L'}$. In other words, we have a canonical bijection between (B.5) and $\{0, 1, \dots, r\}$ where r is the Witt index of V. Moreover, the identity double coset corresponds to 0. For every $d = 0, 1, \dots, r$, we fix a representative γ_d of the corresponding double coset (we take γ_0 to be the identity matrix). Then for $g' \in \mathrm{G}_a(\mathbf{A}_F)$, we have

$$\int_{\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{P}_a}(\iota(g', g); f^{\diamond}_{a,s})\phi(g)\mu(\det g)\mathrm{d}g$$

$$= \sum_{d=0}^{r} \int_{\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \sum_{(\gamma',\gamma)\in\gamma_d^{-1}\mathrm{P}_a(F)\gamma_d\cap(\mathrm{G}_a\times\mathrm{G})(F)\backslash(\mathrm{G}_a\times\mathrm{G})(F)} f^{\diamond}_{a,s}(\gamma_d(\gamma' g',\gamma g))\phi(g)\mu(\det g)\mathrm{d}g$$

$$= \sum_{\gamma'\in\gamma_d^{-1}\mathrm{P}_a(F)\gamma_d\mathrm{G}(F)\cap\mathrm{G}_a(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}_a(F)} \int_{\mathrm{G}(F)\cap\gamma_d^{-1}\mathrm{P}_a(F)\gamma_d\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} f^{\diamond}_{a,s}(\gamma_d(\gamma' g', g))\phi(g)\mu(\det g)\mathrm{d}g.$$

It is easy to see that, since ϕ is cuspidal, the integration vanishes unless $d=0$. Thus, we have

$$\int_{\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{P}_a}(\iota(g',g); f^{\diamond}_{a,s})\phi(g)\mu(\det g)\mathrm{d}g$$

$$= \sum_{\gamma'\in\mathrm{P}_a(F)\mathrm{G}(F)\cap\mathrm{G}_a(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}_a(F)} \int_{\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} f^{\diamond}_{a,s}(\gamma_d(\gamma' g', g))\phi(g)\mu(\det g)\mathrm{d}g$$

$$= \sum_{\gamma'\in\mathrm{P}_a(F)\mathrm{G}(F)\cap\mathrm{G}_a(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}_a(F)} \int_{\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} f^{\diamond}_{a,s}((g^{-1}\gamma' g', 1))\phi(g)\mathrm{d}g$$

$$= \sum_{\gamma'\in\mathrm{P}_a(F)\mathrm{G}(F)\cap\mathrm{G}_a(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}_a(F)} \int_{\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} f^{\diamond,\phi}_{a,s}(\gamma' g')$$

$$= \mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{Q}_a}(g'; f^{\diamond,\phi}_{a,s}).$$

Here, the last equality is due to the fact that $\mathrm{P}_a(F)\mathrm{G}(F)\cap\mathrm{G}_a(F) = \mathrm{Q}_a(F)$. The lemma follows. □

The following lemma suggests that sections of the form $f^{\diamond,\phi}_{a,s}$ detect poles of $\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{Q}_a}$ when a is sufficiently large.

Lemma B.12. *There exists an integer a_0 depending only on V_π and μ such that for every integer $a \geqslant a_0$, if s is not a pole of $\{f^{\diamond,\phi}_{a,s}\}$, then the functions $\{f^{\diamond,\phi}_{a,s}\}$ for all standard sections $f^{\diamond}_{a,s} \in \mathrm{J}_a(s,\mu^{\mathtt{c}})$ and $\phi \in V_\pi$ span the whole space $\mathrm{Ind}^{\mathrm{G}_a(\mathbf{A}_F)}_{\mathrm{Q}_a(\mathbf{A}_F)} V_\pi \boxtimes (\mu^{\mathtt{c}}\cdot|\ |^s_E)\circ\det_a$.*

Proof. This follows from the same discussion after [GJS09, Proposition 3.3]. □

Proof of Proposition B.8. Let s_0 be an element in $\mathrm{Pol}_1(V_\pi\boxtimes\mu^{\mathtt{c}})$ such that $s_0 + j \notin \mathrm{Pol}_1(V_\pi\boxtimes\mu^{\mathtt{c}})$ for every integer $j > 0$. Put $s_a := s_0 + \frac{a-1}{2}$. Let

a be an integer such that $s_a > \frac{n}{2}$ and $a \geqslant a_0$, where a_0 is as in Lemma B.12. By Lemma B.10, $f^{\diamond,\phi}_{a,s}$ is holomorphic at $s = s_a$. By Lemma B.9 and Lemma B.12, we may find some standard section $f^{\diamond}_{a,s} \in \mathrm{J}_a(s, \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$ and $\phi \in V_\pi$ such that $\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{Q}_a}(\quad; f^{\diamond,\phi}_{a,s})$ has a pole at $s = s_a$. By Lemma B.11, we know that $\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{P}_a}(\quad; f^{\diamond}_{a,s})$ has a pole at $s = s_a$ for such $f^{\diamond}_{a,s}$. Therefore, s_0 has to be the maximal element in $\mathrm{Pol}_1(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathsf{c}})$, that is, $s_0 = s_1$. In particular, (2) follows.

We continue for (1). By Lemma B.10(1), the pole must be simple, that is, $\mathrm{Res}_{s=s_a} \mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{P}_a}(\quad; f^{\diamond}_{a,s}) \neq 0$. Put $m := n+1-2s_1$ and $m_a := 2(n+a)-m$. Let W^a be a skew-hermitian space over E of rank m_a. We have a Weil representation of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^{\diamond}_a)(\mathbf{A}_F) \times \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{W}^a)(\mathbf{A}_F)$ on the Schwartz space $\mathscr{S}((\mathrm{V}^+_a \otimes_E \mathrm{W}^a)(\mathbf{A}_F))$, and a $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^{\diamond}_a)(\mathbf{A}_F)$-equivariant map

$$f^{(s_a)} \colon \mathscr{S}((\mathrm{V}^+_a \otimes_E \mathrm{W}^a)(\mathbf{A}_F)) \to \mathrm{Ind}^{\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^{\diamond}_a)(\mathbf{A}_F)}_{\mathrm{P}_a(\mathbf{A}_F)}(\mu^{\mathsf{c}} \cdot |\;|^{s_a}) \circ \det\nolimits_{n+a}$$

sending Φ to $f^{(s_a)}_{\Phi}$, which is known as taking Siegel–Weil sections. For more details, see, for example, [Ich04]. Since $m_a \geqslant n + a$, by [KS97, Theorem 1.2 & Theorem 1.3] and [Lee94, Theorem 6.10], the map

$$f^{(s_a)} \colon \bigoplus_{\mathrm{W}^a} \mathscr{S}((\mathrm{V}^+_a \otimes_E \mathrm{W}^a)(\mathbf{A}_F)) \to \mathrm{Ind}^{\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^{\diamond}_a)(\mathbf{A}_F)}_{\mathrm{P}_a(\mathbf{A}_F)}(\mu^{\mathsf{c}} \cdot |\;|^{s_a}) \circ \det\nolimits_{n+a},$$

by considering all possible skew-hermitian spaces W^a of rank m_a up to isomorphism, is surjective. Thus, there exist some W^a in the above direct sum and an element $\Phi \in \mathscr{S}((\mathrm{V}^+_a \otimes_E \mathrm{W}^a)(\mathbf{A}_F))$ such that $f^{(s_a)}_{\Phi} = f^{\diamond}_{a,s}$, hence $\mathrm{Res}_{s=s_a} \mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{P}_a}(\quad; f^{(s_a)}_{\Phi}) \neq 0$. In particular, the Witt index of W^a is at least $m_a - (n + a)$. Now by the main theorem on [Ich04, p.243], we have the identity

$$\mathrm{Res}_{s=s_a} \mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{P}_a}(\quad; f^{(s_a)}_{\Phi}) = c \cdot \int_{\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{W})(F)\backslash \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{W})(\mathbf{A}_F)} \theta_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\mathbf{1})}(\quad, h)\mathrm{d}h$$

as functions on $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^{\diamond}_a)(\mathbf{A}_F)$. Here, c is a nonzero constant; W is a certain skew-hermitian space of rank $2(n + a) - m_a = m$ determined by W^a; and $\theta_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\mathbf{1})}$ is a certain theta series on $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^{\diamond}_a)(\mathbf{A}_F) \times \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{W})(\mathbf{A}_F)$ with respect to the pair of splitting characters $(\mu^{\mathsf{c}}, \mathbf{1})$ in which $\mathbf{1}$ denotes the trivial character. By Lemma B.11 and our choices of $f^{\diamond}_{a,s}$ and ϕ, the integral

$$\text{(B.6)} \qquad \int_{\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \int_{\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{W})(F)\backslash \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{W})(\mathbf{A}_F)} \theta_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\mathbf{1})}(\iota(g', g), h)\phi(g)\mu(\det g)\mathrm{d}h\mathrm{d}g$$

is nonzero for some $g' \in \mathrm{G}_a(\mathbf{A}_F)$. Now we need to separate the variables g' and g in the above theta series. Choose an arbitrary automorphic character ν of $\mathbf{A}_E^\times$ such that $\nu \mid \mathbf{A}_F^\times = \mu_{E/F}^n$. We have two embeddings

$$\begin{aligned}\iota' \coloneqq \iota \times \mathrm{id}_{\mathrm{U(W)}} \colon \mathrm{G}_a \times \mathrm{G} \times \mathrm{U(W)} &\hookrightarrow \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}_a^\diamond) \times \mathrm{U(W)},\\ \iota'' \colon \mathrm{G}_a \times \mathrm{G} \times \mathrm{U(W)} &\hookrightarrow (\mathrm{G}_a \times \mathrm{U(W)}) \times (\mathrm{G} \times \mathrm{U(W)}),\end{aligned}$$

in which the second one is induced by the diagonal embedding of U(W). It follows from [HKS96, Lemma 1.1] that

$$\omega_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\mathbf{1})}^{\mathrm{V}_a^\diamond,\mathrm{W}} \circ \iota' \simeq \left(\omega_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\nu^{\mathsf{c}})}^{\mathrm{V}_a,\mathrm{W}} \widehat{\otimes} \omega_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\nu)}^{\mathrm{V},\mathrm{W}}\right) \circ \iota''$$

for the restriction of Weil representations (B.1). Therefore, without lost of generality, we may assume that there exist finitely many pairs $(\theta^{(i)}_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\nu^{\mathsf{c}})}, \theta^{[i]}_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\nu)})$ in which $\theta^{(i)}_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\nu^{\mathsf{c}})}$ (resp. $\theta^{[i]}_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\nu)}$) is a theta series on $\mathrm{G}_a(\mathbf{A}_F) \times \mathrm{U(W)}(\mathbf{A}_F)$ (resp. $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F) \times \mathrm{U(W)}(\mathbf{A}_F)$) with respect to $(\mu^{\mathsf{c}}, \nu^{\mathsf{c}})$ (resp. (μ^{c}, ν)) such that

$$\theta_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\mathbf{1})}(\iota(g',g),h) = \sum_i \theta^{(i)}_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\nu^{\mathsf{c}})}(g',h)\theta^{[i]}_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\nu)}(g,h),$$

and that (B.6) is nonzero for some $g' \in \mathrm{G}_a(\mathbf{A}_F)$. Then we have

$$\begin{aligned}\text{(B.6)} &= \int_{\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \int_{\mathrm{U(W)}(F)\backslash\mathrm{U(W)}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \theta_{\underline{\mu}}(\iota(g',g),h)\phi(g)\mu(\det g)\mathrm{d}h\mathrm{d}g\\ &= \int_{\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \int_{\mathrm{U(W)}(F)\backslash\mathrm{U(W)}(\mathbf{A}_F)}\\ &\qquad \sum_i \theta^{(i)}_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\nu^{\mathsf{c}})}(g',h)\theta^{[i]}_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\nu)}(g,h)\phi(g)\mu(\det g)\mathrm{d}h\mathrm{d}g\\ &= \sum_i \int_{\mathrm{U(W)}(F)\backslash\mathrm{U(W)}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \theta^{(i)}_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\nu^{\mathsf{c}})}(g',h)\\ &\qquad \times \left(\int_{\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \theta^{[i]}_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\nu)}(g,h)\phi(g)\mu(\det g)\mathrm{d}g\right)\mathrm{d}h\\ &= \sum_i \int_{\mathrm{U(W)}(F)\backslash\mathrm{U(W)}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \theta^{(i)}_{(\mu^{\mathsf{c}},\nu^{\mathsf{c}})}(g',h)\\ &\qquad \times \left(\int_{\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \theta^{[i]}_{(\mu,\nu)}(g,h)\phi(g)\mathrm{d}g\right)\mathrm{d}h.\end{aligned}$$

In particular, there exists some i such that

$$\int_{\mathrm{G}(F)\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}_F)} \theta^{[i]}_{(\mu,\nu)}(g,h)\phi(g)\mathrm{d}g \not\equiv 0.$$

In other words, $\Theta^{\mathrm{W}}_{(\mu,\nu),\mathrm{V}}(V_\pi) \neq 0$, and (1) follows. □

Proof of Theorem B.4. By the Langlands–Shahidi theory, the poles of the Eisenstein series $\mathscr{E}_{\mathrm{Q}}(\quad; f_s)$ are controlled by its constant term, which in term are control by the intertwining operator attached to the longest Weyl element in $\mathrm{Q}\backslash\mathrm{G}_1/\mathrm{Q}$. By the Gindikin–Karpelevich formula, we know that the poles of the L-function

$$\text{(B.7)} \qquad \frac{L^S(s,\pi\times\mu)\cdot L^S(2s,\mu,\mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n})}{L^S(s+1,\pi\times\mu)\cdot L^S(2s+1,\mu,\mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n})}$$

in the region $\mathrm{Re}(s) > 0$ are contained in the set $\mathrm{Pol}_1(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathtt{c}})$. See the proof of [GJS09, Proposition 2.2] for a similar discussion in the orthogonal case.

We first consider the case where $\mu^{\mathtt{c}} \neq \mu^{-1}$. Then $L^S(s,\mu,\mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n})$ has no pole for $\mathrm{Re}(s) > 0$. On the other hand, by [Kim99, Corollary 2.2], the set $\mathrm{Pol}_1(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathtt{c}})$ is empty. Thus, it follows easily that $L^S(s,\pi\boxtimes\mu)$ has no pole for $\mathrm{Re}(s) > 0$ as well. Theorem B.4 is proved in this case.

Now we assume that $\mu^{\mathtt{c}} = \mu^{-1}$. In other words, $\mu \mid \mathbf{A}_F^\times = \mu^i_{E/F}$ for a unique element $i \in \{0,1\}$. Part (2) is a consequence of the local theta dichotomy [SZ15, Theorem 1.10]. It remains to consider (1). Let s_0 be a pole of $L^S(s,\pi\times\mu)\cdot L^S(2s,\mu,\mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n})$ as in (a). Let $j \geqslant 0$ be the largest non-negative integer such that s_0+j is a pole of $L^S(s,\pi\times\mu)\cdot L^S(2s,\mu,\mathrm{As}^{(-1)^n})$. Then the L-function (B.7) has a pole at s_0+j. Thus, we have $s_0+j \in \mathrm{Pol}_1(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathtt{c}})$, and (b) holds. For the implication (b) $\Rightarrow$ (c), by Rallis' tower property for the global theta lifting, we may assume that $j=0$ in (b) and $s_0+j \notin \mathrm{Pol}_1(V_\pi \boxtimes \mu^{\mathtt{c}})$ for every integer $j>0$. Then by Proposition B.8(2), $s_0 = s_1$. Then (c) follows from Proposition B.8(1). □

Appendix C. Shimura varieties for hermitian spaces

In this appendix, we summarize different versions of unitary Shimura varieties. In Subsection C.1, we recall Shimura varieties associated to isometry groups of hermitian spaces, which are of abelian type; we also introduce the Shimura varieties associated to incoherent hermitian spaces. In Subsection C.2, we recall the well-known PEL type Shimura varieties associated to groups of rational similitude of skew-hermitian spaces, and their integral models at good primes, after Kottwitz. These Shimura varieties are only for the preparation of the next subsection, which are not logically needed in the main part of the article. In Subsection C.3, we summarize the connection of these two kinds of unitary Shimura varieties via the third one which possesses a moduli interpretation but is not of PEL type in the sense of Kottwitz, after [BHK+20, RSZ20]. In Subsection C.4, we discuss integral models of the third unitary Shimura varieties at good inert primes and their uniformization along the basic locus.

Let F be a totally real number field of degree $d \geqslant 1$, and E/F a totally imaginary quadratic extension. Denote by $\mathtt{c}$ the nontrivial involution of E over F. Denote by Φ_F the set of real embeddings of F and by Φ_E the set of complex embeddings of E. Let $\mathbb{N}[\Phi_E]$ be the commutative monoid freely generated by Φ_E. The Galois group $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q})$ acts on Φ_E, hence on $\mathbb{N}[\Phi_E]$. We have the projection map $\pi\colon \Phi_E \to \Phi_F$ given by restriction. Recall that a CM type (of E) is a subset Φ of Φ_E such that π induces a bijection from Φ to Φ_F. For a CM type Φ, put $\Phi^{\mathtt{c}} \coloneqq \Phi_E \setminus \Phi$, which is again a CM type.

C.1. Case of isometry

Let V be a (non-degenerate) hermitian space over E (with respect to $\mathtt{c}$) of rank $n \geqslant 1$, with the hermitian form $(\ ,\ )_{\mathrm{V}}\colon \mathrm{V}\times\mathrm{V} \to E$ that is E-linear in the first variable. For every $\tau \in \Phi_F$, let (p_τ, q_τ) be the signature of $\mathrm{V}\otimes_{F,\tau}\mathbb{R}$. We take a CM type $\Phi \subseteq \Phi_E$. Then we have two elements

$$\mathrm{sig}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi} \coloneqq \sum_{\tau\in\Phi_F} p_\tau\tau^+ + \sum_{\tau\in\Phi_F} q_\tau\tau^-, \qquad \mathrm{sig}^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi} \coloneqq \sum_{\tau\in\Phi_F} q_\tau\tau^- \tag{C.1}$$

in $\mathbb{N}[\Phi_E]$. Here, τ^- (resp. τ^+) is the unique element in Φ (resp. $\Phi^{\mathtt{c}}$) whose image under π is τ.

Definition C.1. We define the *reflex field* (resp. *reduced reflex field*) of the pair (V,Φ) to be the fixed field of the stabilizer in $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q})$ of the element $\mathrm{sig}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$ (resp. $\mathrm{sig}^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$), denoted by $E_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$ (resp. $E^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$).

Let $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})$ be the unitary group (of isometry) of V, that is, the reductive group over F such that for every F-algebra R, we have

$$\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(R) = \{g \in \mathrm{GL}_R(\mathrm{V}\otimes_F R) \mid (gx, gy)_{\mathrm{V}} = (x,y)_{\mathrm{V}} \text{ for all } x,y \in \mathrm{V}\otimes_F R\}.$$

For every $\tau \in \Phi_F$, we may identify $\mathrm{V}\otimes_{E,\tau^-}\mathbb{C}$ with $\mathbb{C}^{\oplus n}$, hence $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})\otimes_{F,\tau}\mathbb{R}$ is identified with the subgroup of $\mathrm{Res}_{\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{R}}\mathrm{GL}_n$ of elements preserving the hermitian form given by the matrix $\begin{pmatrix} \mathrm{I}_{p_\tau} & \\ & -\mathrm{I}_{q_\tau} \end{pmatrix}$.

Put $\mathrm{G} := \mathrm{Res}_{F/\mathbb{Q}} \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})$. We define the Hodge map

$$\mathrm{h}^{\flat}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}\colon \mathrm{Res}_{\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{G}_{\mathrm{m}} \to \mathrm{G}_{\mathbb{R}}$$

to be the one sending $z \in \mathbb{C}^\times = (\mathrm{Res}_{\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{G}_{\mathrm{m}})(\mathbb{R})$ to

$$\left(\begin{pmatrix} \mathrm{I}_{p_{\tau_1}} & \\ & (z/\overline{z})\mathrm{I}_{q_{\tau_1}} \end{pmatrix}, \dots, \begin{pmatrix} \mathrm{I}_{p_{\tau_d}} & \\ & (z/\overline{z})\mathrm{I}_{q_{\tau_d}} \end{pmatrix} \right) \in \mathrm{G}_{\mathbb{R}}(\mathbb{R}),$$

where we identify $\mathrm{G}_{\mathbb{R}}(\mathbb{R})$ as a subgroup of $\mathrm{GL}_n(\mathbb{C})^d$ via $\{\tau_1^-, \dots, \tau_d^-\}$. Then we obtain a Shimura data $(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}^{\flat}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi})$. It is of abelian type but not Hodge type; and its reflex field coincides with $E^{\flat}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$. The theory of Shimura varieties provides us with a projective system of schemes $\{\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}^{\flat}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi})_K\}_K$, quasi-projective and smooth over $E^{\flat}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$ of dimension $\sum_{\tau\in\Phi_F} p_\tau q_\tau$, indexed by neat open compact subgroups K of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty) = \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$.

Remark C.2. Suppose that there is an element $\tau \in \Phi_F$ such that V has signature $(n-1, 1)$ at τ and $(n, 0)$ at other places. Then the Hodge map $\mathrm{h}^{\flat}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$ hence the Shimura variety $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}^{\flat}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi})_K$ depend only on $\Phi \cap \pi^{-1}\tau$, that is, the unique element contained in Φ above τ. Thus, for an element $\tau' \in \Phi_E$ above τ, we may write $\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'}$ and $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_K$ for those Φ containing τ'. In particular, the reflex field of $\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'}$ is $\tau'(E)$. The Galois group $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\tau'(E))$ acts on the set of connected components of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_K \otimes_{\iota'(E)} \mathbb{C}$ via the composite homomorphism

$$\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\tau'(E)) \xrightarrow{\mathrm{rec}} \tau'(E)^\times \backslash (\mathbf{A}^\infty_{\tau'(E)})^\times \xrightarrow{(\tau')^{-1}} E^\times \backslash (\mathbf{A}_E^\infty)^\times \xrightarrow{e \mapsto e/e^{\mathtt{c}}} E^1 \backslash (\mathbf{A}_E^\infty)^1,$$

where rec is the global reciprocity map for the number field $\tau'(E)$.

Now we would like to attach Shimura varieties to an incoherent hermitian space, a concept originated from [KR94] in the orthogonal case and explored in [Zha19]. This observation generalizes the case of Shimura curves in [YZZ13], and has already appeared in some old work [Liu11a, Liu11b], with more details explained by Gross [Gro21] recently.

Definition C.3. An *incoherent hermitian space* over $\mathbf{A}_E$ is a free $\mathbf{A}_E$-module $\mathbf{V}$ of some rank $n \geqslant 1$, equipped with a non-degenerate hermitian form $(\ ,\ )_{\mathbf{V}}\colon \mathbf{V} \times \mathbf{V} \to \mathbf{A}_E$ with respect to the (induced) involution $\mathtt{c}$ on $\mathbf{A}_E$ such that its determinant belongs to $\mathbf{A}_F^\times \setminus F^\times \mathrm{N}_{\mathbf{A}_E/\mathbf{A}_F} \mathbf{A}_E^\times$. We say that $\mathbf{V}$ is totally positive definite if for every $\tau \in \Phi_F$, $\mathbf{V} \otimes_{\mathbf{A}_F,\tau} \mathbb{R}$ is positive definite.

Let $\mathbf{V}$ be a totally positive definite incoherent hermitian space over $\mathbf{A}_E$ of rank $n \geqslant 1$, and let $\mathbf{G} := \mathrm{U}(\mathbf{V})$ be its group of isometry, which is a reductive group over $\mathbf{A}_F$.

Definition C.4. For $\tau \in \Phi_F$, we say that a hermitian space V over E is *τ-nearby to* $\mathbf{V}$ if $\mathrm{V}\otimes_F \mathbf{A}_F^\tau \simeq \mathbf{V}\otimes_{\mathbf{A}_F}\mathbf{A}_F^\tau$, and $\mathrm{V}\otimes_{F,\tau}\mathbb{R}$ has signature $(n-1,1)$.

It is clear that for every $\tau \in \Phi_F$, there exists a hermitian space that is τ-nearby to $\mathbf{V}$, unique up to isomorphism. We fix such a space $\mathrm{V}(\tau)$. Put $\mathrm{G}(\tau) := \mathrm{Res}_{F/\mathbb{Q}}\,\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}(\tau))$. We fix an isomorphism $\mathbf{V}\otimes_{\mathbf{A}_F}\mathbf{A}_F^\infty \simeq \mathrm{V}(\tau)\otimes_F \mathbf{A}_F^\infty$, hence an isomorphism $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty) \simeq \mathrm{G}(\tau)(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$.

Proposition C.5. *There is a projective system of schemes $\{\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K\}_K$ over E indexed by sufficiently small open compact subgroups K of $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$, such that for every $\tau \in \Phi_F$ and every $\tau' \in \Phi_E$ above it, we have an isomorphism*

$$\{\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K \otimes_{E,\tau'} \tau'(E)\}_K \simeq \{\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}(\tau), \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V}(\tau),\tau'})_K\}_K$$

of projective systems of schemes over $\tau'(E)$. Here, we use the fixed isomorphism $\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty) \simeq \mathrm{G}(\tau)(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$ to regard K as a subgroup of $\mathrm{G}(\tau)(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$.

Proof. See [Gro21, Section 10]. □

Definition C.6. We call the projective system of schemes $\{\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K\}_K$ over E in Proposition C.5 the *Shimura varieties associated to* $\mathbf{V}$.

Remark C.7. One can also interpret Proposition C.5 in the following way: The scheme

$$\prod_{\tau\in\Phi_F}\prod_{\tau'\in\pi^{-1}\tau} \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}(\tau), \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V}(\tau),\tau'})_K$$

over

$$\prod_{\tau\in\Phi_F}\prod_{\tau'\in\pi^{-1}\tau} \mathrm{Spec}\,\tau'(E) = \prod_{\tau'\in\Phi_E} \mathrm{Spec}\,\tau'(E)$$

descends to a scheme $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ over $\mathrm{Spec}\,E$, where the above fiber products are taken over $\mathrm{Spec}\,\mathbb{Q}$.

The scheme $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ (for K sufficiently small) is quasi-projective and smooth over E of dimension $n-1$. It is projective if $d > 1$ or $n = 1$. In all cases, we denote by $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K$ the Baily–Borel compactification of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ over E. Then $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K \setminus \mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ is either empty or consists of isolated singular points. Let $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K$ be the blow-up of $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K$ along $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K \setminus \mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$. If $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ is proper, then $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K = \mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$. Otherwise, we must have $d = 1$, that is, $F = \mathbb{Q}$. In this case, there is only one choice for $\tau \in \Phi_F$, for which we will suppress from various notation like $\mathrm{V}(\tau)$, $\mathrm{G}(\tau)$, etc. However, there are still two choices of Φ, say, $\{\tau^+\}$ and $\{\tau^-\}$. We have isomorphisms

$$\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K \otimes_{E,\tau^\pm} \tau^\pm(E) \simeq \widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau^\pm})_K \tag{C.2}$$

extending those in Proposition C.5. Here, $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau^\pm})_K$ is the unique toroidal compactification of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau^\pm})_K$ over E [AMRT10, Pin90].

Definition C.8. We call the projective system of schemes $\{\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K\}_K$ over E the *compactified Shimura varieties associated to* $\mathbf{V}$ (even when $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ is already proper).

Remark C.9. The boundary $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathbf{V})_K \setminus \mathrm{Sh}(\mathbf{V})_K$ is a smooth divisor.

C.2. Case of similitude

In this subsection, we recall the notion of Shimura varieties attached to the group of similitude of a hermitian space, which are of PEL type. They will not be used in the main part of the article, but it is instructional to introduce them for the later discussion.

Let

$$\Psi = \sum_{\tau\in\Phi_F} p_\tau \tau^+ + \sum_{\tau\in\Phi_F} q_\tau \tau^-$$

be an element of $\mathbb{N}[\Phi_E]$ such that $p_\tau + q_\tau = n$ for every $\tau \in \Phi_F$. Let E_Ψ be the fixed field of the stabilizer of Ψ in $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q})$.

Definition C.10. Let S be an E_Ψ-scheme.

(1) An (E,Ψ)-*abelian scheme* over S is a pair (A, i), where A is an abelian scheme over S, and $i\colon E \to \mathrm{End}_S(A)_\mathbb{Q}$ is a homomorphism of $\mathbb{Q}$-algebras such that for every $e \in E$, the characteristic polynomial of $i(e)$ on the locally free sheaf $\mathrm{Lie}_S(A)$ on S is equal to

$$\prod_{\tau\in\Phi_F} (T - \tau^+(e))^{p_\tau} (T - \tau^-(e))^{q_\tau} \in \mathcal{O}_S[T].$$

(2) A polarization of an (E,Ψ)-abelian scheme (A, i) is a polarization $\lambda\colon A \to A^\vee$ satisfying $\lambda \circ i(e) = i(e^\mathtt{c})^\vee \circ \lambda$ for every $e \in E$.

Definition C.11. For a ring R containing $\mathbb{Q}$, a *rational skew-hermitian space* over $E \otimes_\mathbb{Q} R$ of rank n is a free $E \otimes_\mathbb{Q} R$-module W of rank n together with a R-bilinear skew-symmetric non-degenerate pairing

$$\langle\ ,\ \rangle_\mathrm{W}\colon \mathrm{W} \times \mathrm{W} \to R$$

satisfying $\langle ex, y\rangle_{\mathrm{W}} = \langle x, e^{\mathtt{c}}y\rangle_{\mathrm{W}}$ for every $e \in E$ and $x, y \in \mathrm{W}$. We say that two rational skew-hermitian spaces W and W′ over $E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} R$ is *similar* if there exists an isomorphism $f\colon \mathrm{W} \to \mathrm{W}'$ of $E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} R$-modules such that there exists some $\nu(f) \in R^\times$ satisfying $\langle f(x), f(y)\rangle_{\mathrm{W}'} = \nu(f)\langle x, y\rangle_{\mathrm{W}}$ for every $x, y \in \mathrm{W}$.

We take a rational skew-hermitian space $\mathbf{W}^\infty$ over $\mathbf{A}_E^\infty = E \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbf{A}^\infty$ of rank n. Let $\mathbf{H}^\infty$ be the group of similitude of $\mathbf{W}^\infty$, which is a reductive group over $\mathbf{A}^\infty$. We denote by $\mathcal{W}(\mathbf{W}^\infty, \Psi)$ the set of similarity classes of rational skew-hermitian spaces W over E of rank n such that

- $\mathrm{W} \otimes_E \mathbf{A}_E^\infty$ is similar to $\mathbf{W}^\infty$ as a rational skew-hermitian space over $\mathbf{A}_E^\infty = E \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbf{A}^\infty$ (and we fix a similarity isomorphism),
- the signature of the hermitian form $\langle\ , i\cdot\ \rangle_{\mathrm{W}}$ on the $\mathbb{C}$-vector space $\mathrm{W} \otimes_{E,\tau^-} \mathbb{C}$ is (p_τ, q_τ).

It is a finite set; and its cardinality is at most one if n is even.

For every $\mathrm{W} \in \mathcal{W}(\mathbf{W}^\infty, \Psi)$, let H be its group of similitude, that is, the reductive group over $\mathbb{Q}$ such that for every ring R containing $\mathbb{Q}$, we have

$$\begin{aligned}&\mathrm{H}(R)\\&= \{h \in \mathrm{GL}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} R}(\mathrm{W} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} R) \mid \langle hx, hy\rangle_{\mathrm{W}} = \nu(h)\langle x, y\rangle_{\mathrm{W}} \text{ for some } \nu(h) \in R^\times\}.\end{aligned}$$

We define the Hodge map

$$\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W},\Psi}\colon \operatorname{Res}_{\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{G}_{\mathrm{m}} \to \mathrm{H}_{\mathbb{R}}$$

to be the one sending $z \in \mathbb{C}^\times = (\operatorname{Res}_{\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{G}_{\mathrm{m}})(\mathbb{R})$ to

$$\left(\begin{pmatrix} \overline{z}\mathrm{I}_{p_{\tau_1}} & \\ & z\mathrm{I}_{q_{\tau_1}} \end{pmatrix}, \dots, \begin{pmatrix} \overline{z}\mathrm{I}_{p_{\tau_d}} & \\ & z\mathrm{I}_{q_{\tau_d}} \end{pmatrix}; z\overline{z}\right) \in \mathrm{H}_{\mathbb{R}}(\mathbb{R}),$$

where we identify $\mathrm{H}_{\mathbb{R}}(\mathbb{R})$ as a subgroup of $\mathrm{GL}_n(\mathbb{C})^d \times \mathbb{C}^\times$ via $\{\tau_1^-, \dots, \tau_d^-\}$. Then we have a Shimura data $(\mathrm{H}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W},\Psi})$ with the reflex field E_Ψ. We obtain a projective system of schemes $\{\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{H}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W},\Psi})_L\}_L$, quasi-projective and smooth over E_Ψ of dimension $\sum_{\tau\in\Phi_F} p_\tau q_\tau$, indexed by neat open compact subgroups L of $\mathbf{H}^\infty(\mathbf{A}^\infty) \simeq \mathrm{H}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$.

The Shimura data $(\mathrm{H}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W},\Psi})$ is of PEL type. In particular, it has a moduli interpretation which we roughly recall in the following definition.

Definition C.12 ([Kot92])**.** For an open compact subgroup $L \subseteq \mathbf{H}^\infty(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$, we define a presheaf $\mathrm{M}(\mathbf{W}^\infty, \Psi)_L$ on $\mathrm{Sch}'_{/E_\Psi}$ as follows: For every object $S \in \mathrm{Sch}'_{/E_\Psi}$, we let $\mathrm{M}(\mathbf{W}^\infty, \Psi)_L(S)$ be the set of equivalence classes of quadruples (A, i, λ, η), where

- (A, i) is an (E, Ψ)-abelian scheme over S (Definition C.10),
- λ is a polarization of (A, i) (Definition C.10),
- η is an L-level structure (see [Kot92, Section 5] for more details).

Two quadruples (A, i, λ, η) and $(A', i', \lambda', \eta'))$ are equivalent if there is an isogeny $\varphi\colon A \to A'$ taking i, λ, η to $i', c\lambda', \eta'$ for some $c \in \mathbb{Q}^\times$.

From [Kot92], it is known that $\mathrm{M}(\mathbf{W}^\infty, \Psi)_L$ is a scheme if L is sufficiently small, and we have a canonical isomorphism

$$\mathrm{M}(\mathbf{W}^\infty, \Psi)_L \simeq \coprod_{\mathrm{W} \in \mathcal{W}(\mathbf{W}^\infty, \Psi)} \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{H}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W},\Psi})_L$$

functorial in L.

Remark C.13. Let p be a rational prime unramified in E such that we may write $L = L^p \times L_p$ in which L_p is the stabilizer of a self-dual lattice in $\mathbf{W}^\infty \otimes_{\mathbf{A}^\infty} \mathbb{Q}_p$. Then the presheaf $\mathrm{M}(\mathbf{W}^\infty, \Psi)_L$ admits an extension $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{W}^\infty, \Psi)_L$ to a presheaf on $\mathrm{Sch}'_{/O_{E_\Psi,(p)}}$ as follows: For every object $S \in \mathrm{Sch}'_{/O_{E_\Psi,(p)}}$, we let $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{W}^\infty, \Psi)_L(S)$ be the set of equivalence classes of quadruples (A, i, λ, η^p), where

- (A, i) is an (E, Ψ)-abelian scheme over S in the sense similar to Definition C.10 but with $i\colon O_{E,(p)} \to \mathrm{End}_S(A) \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{Z}_{(p)}$ being a homomorphism of $\mathbb{Z}_{(p)}$-algebras,
- λ is a p-principal polarization of (A, i),
- η^p is an L^p-level structure.

The equivalence relation is defined in a similar way as in Definition C.12 except that we require the isogenies to be coprime to p and $c \in \mathbb{Z}_{(p)}^\times$. The functor $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{W}^\infty, \Psi)_L$ is a smooth separated scheme in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/O_{E_\Psi,(p)}}$ if L is sufficiently small; and is functorial in L.

C.3. Their connection

In this subsection, we study the connection between Shimura varieties in the case of isometry and those in the case of similitude. Consider

- a hermitian space $\mathrm{V}, (\ ,\ )_{\mathrm{V}}$ over E of rank n,
- a rational skew-hermitian space $\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \langle\ ,\ \rangle_0$ over $\mathbf{A}_E^\infty = E \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbf{A}^\infty$ of rank 1 with the group of similitude $\mathbf{H}_0^\infty$,
- a CM type Φ of E such that $\mathcal{W}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})$ is nonempty.

We now equip $\mathbf{W}^\infty := \mathrm{V} \otimes_E \mathbf{W}_0^\infty$ with a rational skew-hermitian form over $\mathbf{A}_E^\infty = E \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbf{A}^\infty$. For $x, y \in \mathbf{W}_0^\infty$, let $\langle x, y\rangle_0^\dagger \in \mathbf{A}_E^\infty$ be the unique element such that $\mathrm{Tr}_{E/\mathbb{Q}}(e \cdot \langle x, y\rangle_0^\dagger) = \langle ex, y\rangle_0$ for every $e \in \mathbf{A}_E^\infty$. Thus, we obtain a non-degenerate pairing $\langle\ ,\ \rangle_0^\dagger \colon \mathbf{W}_0^\infty \times \mathbf{W}_0^\infty \to \mathbf{A}_E^\infty$ that is $\mathbf{A}_E^\infty$-linear in the first variable. We equip $\mathbf{W}^\infty$ with the pairing $\mathrm{Tr}_{E/\mathbb{Q}}(\ ,\ )_{\mathrm{V}} \otimes_E \langle\ ,\ \rangle_0^\dagger$, which becomes a rational skew-hermitian space over $E \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbf{A}^\infty$. By a similar construction, we obtain a map $\mathcal{W}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}}) \to \mathcal{W}(\mathbf{W}^\infty, \Psi)$ sending W_0 to W, where $\Psi = \mathrm{sig}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$ (C.1). Take an element $\mathrm{W}_0 \in \mathcal{W}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})$ with H_0 its group of similitude. We obtain three Shimura data: $(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi})$, $(\mathrm{H}_0, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W}_0,\Phi^{\mathtt{c}}})$, and $(\mathrm{H}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W},\Psi})$ with reflex fields $E^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$, E_Φ, and $E_\Psi = E_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$, respectively.

Lemma C.14. *Let $E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$ be the subfield of $\mathbb{C}$ generated by $E^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$ and E_Φ. Then $E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$ contains $E_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$.*

Proof. By definition, the subgroup of $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q})$ fixing $E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$ stabilizes both $\mathrm{sig}^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$ and Φ. Thus, it stabilizes $\mathrm{sig}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$. The lemma follows. □

Remark C.15. In the main part of the article, the hermitian space V we encounter will have signature $(n-1, 1)$ at one place $\tau \in \Phi_F$ and $(n, 0)$ elsewhere for some $n \geqslant 2$. Then for whatever Φ, we have $E^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi} = \tau'(E)$, where $\tau' \in \Phi_E$ is either place above τ. However, it is possible that $\bigcap_\Phi E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$ strictly contains $\tau'(E)$, where Φ runs over all CM types of E.

Now we consider the reductive group $\mathrm{G}^\sharp := \mathrm{G} \times \mathrm{H}_0$ over $\mathbb{Q}$. Put $\mathrm{h}^\sharp_\Phi := (\mathrm{h}^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W}_0,\Phi^{\mathtt{c}}})$. Then we have a product Shimura data $(\mathrm{G}^\sharp, \mathrm{h}^\sharp_\Phi)$, whose reflex field is $E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$. On the other hand, there is a homomorphism $\mathtt{q}_{\mathrm{W}} \colon \mathrm{G}^\sharp = \mathrm{G} \times \mathrm{H}_0 \to \mathrm{H}$ induced by taking tensor product. It is clear that $\mathtt{q}_{\mathrm{W}} \circ \mathrm{h}^\sharp_\Phi = \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W},\Psi}$. To summarize, we have the following diagram of Shimura data

(C.3)
$$\begin{array}{ccc} (\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}) & & \\ \uparrow{\scriptstyle \mathtt{q}_{\mathrm{V}}} & & \\ (\mathrm{G}^\sharp, \mathrm{h}^\sharp_\Phi) & \xrightarrow{\mathtt{q}_{\mathrm{W}}} & (\mathrm{H}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W},\Psi}). \\ \downarrow{\scriptstyle \mathtt{q}_{\mathrm{W}_0}} & & \\ (\mathrm{H}_0, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W}_0,\Phi^{\mathtt{c}}}) & & \end{array}$$

For neat open compact subgroups $K \subseteq \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$, $L_0 \subseteq \mathrm{H}_0(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$, and $L \subseteq \mathrm{H}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$ satisfying $\mathtt{q}_{\mathrm{W}}(K \times L_0) \subseteq L$, we have the following diagram of

Shimura varieties induced from (C.3)

(C.4)

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}^{\flat}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi})_K \otimes_{E^{\flat}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}} E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi} & & \\ & \nwarrow^{\mathsf{q}_{\mathrm{V}}} & \\ & & \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}^{\sharp},\mathrm{h}^{\sharp}_{\Phi})_{K\times L_0} \xrightarrow{\mathsf{q}_{\mathrm{W}}} \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{H},\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W},\Psi})_L \otimes_{E_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}} E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi} \\ & \swarrow_{\mathsf{q}_{\mathrm{W}_0}} & \\ \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{H}_0,\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W}_0,\Phi^{\mathtt{c}}})_{L_0} \otimes_{E_\Phi} E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi} & & \end{array}$$

in view of Lemma C.14, in which $(\mathsf{q}_{\mathrm{V}},\mathsf{q}_{\mathrm{W}_0})$ induces an isomorphism

(C.5)

$$\begin{aligned} &\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}^{\sharp},\mathrm{h}^{\sharp}_{\Phi})_{K\times L_0} \\ &\quad\simeq \left(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}^{\flat}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi})_K \otimes_{E^{\flat}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}} E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}\right) \times_{E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}} \left(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{H}_0,\mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W}_0,\Phi^{\mathtt{c}}})_{L_0} \otimes_{E_\Phi} E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}\right) \end{aligned}$$

in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}}$, functorial in K, L_0, and under Hecke translations.

The Shimura variety $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}^{\sharp},\mathrm{h}^{\sharp}_{\Phi})_{K\times L_0}$ has a moduli interpretation as well.

Definition C.16. For open compact subgroups $K \subseteq \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$ and $L \subseteq \mathbf{H}_1^\infty(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$, we define a presheaf $\mathrm{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_1^\infty,\Phi)_{K,L_1}$ on $\mathrm{Sch}'_{/E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}}$ as follows: For every object $S \in \mathrm{Sch}'_{/E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}}$, we let $\mathrm{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_1^\infty,\Phi)_{K,L_1}(S)$ be the set of equivalence classes of octuples $(A_0,i_0,\lambda_0,\eta_0;A,i,\lambda,\eta)$, where

- (A_0,i_0) is an $(E,\Phi^{\mathtt{c}})$-abelian scheme over S,
- λ_0 is a polarization of (A_0,i_0),
- η_0 is an L_0-level structure for (A_0,i_0,λ_0),
- (A,i) is an $(E,\mathrm{sig}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi})$-abelian scheme over S,
- λ is a polarization of (A,i),
- for chosen geometric point s on every connected component of S, η is a $\pi_1(S,s)$-invariant K-orbit of isometries

$$\mathrm{V}\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^\infty \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathrm{Hom}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^\infty}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_{0s},\mathbf{A}^\infty),\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_s,\mathbf{A}^\infty))$$

  of hermitian spaces over $\mathbf{A}_E^\infty$. Here, the hermitian pairing on the latter space is defined such that (x,y) equals

$$i_0^{-1}\left((\lambda_{0*})^{-1}\circ y^\vee\circ\lambda_*\circ x\right) \in i_0^{-1}\,\mathrm{End}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^\infty}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_{0s},\mathbf{A}^\infty)) = \mathbf{A}_E^\infty.$$

Two octuples $(A_0, i_0, \lambda_0, \eta_0; A, i, \lambda, \eta)$ and $(A_0', i_0', \lambda_0', \eta_0'; A', i', \lambda', \eta')$ are equivalent if there are isogenies $\varphi_0 \colon A_0 \to A_0'$ and $\varphi \colon A \to A'$ such that

- there exists $c \in \mathbb{Q}^\times$ such that $\varphi_0^\vee \circ \lambda_0' \circ \varphi_0 = c\lambda_0$ and $\varphi^\vee \circ \lambda' \circ \varphi = c\lambda$,
- for every $e \in E$, we have $\varphi_0 \circ i_0(e) = i_0'(e) \circ \varphi_0$ and $\varphi \circ i(e) = i'(e) \circ \varphi$,
- the K-orbit of maps $x \mapsto \varphi_* \circ \eta(x) \circ (\varphi_{0*})^{-1}$ for $x \in \mathrm{V} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbf{A}^\infty$ coincides with η'.

Remark C.17. The Shimura variety $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}^\sharp, \mathrm{h}^\sharp_\Phi)_{K \times L_1}$ and its moduli interpretation were first introduced in [BHK+20] when $F = \mathbb{Q}$, and in [RSZ20] for more general CM extension E/F.

Lemma C.18. *Let the notation be as above. We have a canonical isomorphism*

$$\begin{aligned}&\mathrm{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K,L_0}\\ &\quad \simeq \left(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi})_K \otimes_{E^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}} E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}\right) \times_{E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}} \left(\mathrm{M}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})_{L_0} \otimes_{E_\Phi} E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}\right)\end{aligned}$$

in $\mathrm{Sch}_{/E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}}$*, functorial in* K*,* L_0*, and under Hecke translations.*

Proof. We have canonical morphisms

$$\begin{aligned}\mathsf{q} \colon \mathrm{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K,L_0} &\to \mathrm{M}(\mathbf{W}^\infty, \Psi)_L \otimes_{E_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}} E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}\\ \mathsf{q}_0 \colon \mathrm{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K,L_0} &\to \mathrm{M}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})_{L_0} \otimes_{E_\Phi} E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}\end{aligned}$$

of functors obtained from the moduli interpretation. Since $(\mathsf{q}, \mathsf{q}_0)$ induces a closed embedding, the functor $\mathrm{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K,L_0}$ is representable. Moreover, we have a canonical isomorphism

$$\mathrm{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K,L_0} \simeq \coprod_{\mathrm{W}_0 \in \mathcal{W}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})} \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}^\sharp, \mathrm{h}^\sharp_\Phi)_{K \times L_0} \tag{C.6}$$

functorial in K, L_0, and under Hecke translations. The morphisms q and q_0 are compatible with q_{W} and $\mathsf{q}_{\mathrm{W}_0}$ in (C.4), respectively. Combining with (C.5), we have

$$\begin{aligned}\text{(C.6)} \simeq &\left(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi})_K \otimes_{E^\flat_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}} E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}\right)\\ &\times_{E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}} \left(\coprod_{\mathrm{W}_0 \in \mathcal{W}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)} \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{H}_0, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{W}_0,\Phi^{\mathtt{c}}})_{L_0} \otimes_{E_\Phi} E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}\right)\end{aligned}$$

$$\simeq \left(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}^{\flat}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi})_K \otimes_{E^{\flat}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}} E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}\right) \times_{E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}} \left(\mathrm{M}(\mathbf{W}_0^{\infty},\Phi^{\mathtt{c}})_{L_0} \otimes_{E_\Phi} E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}\right).$$

The lemma follows. □

C.4. Integral models and uniformization

In this subsection, we study integral models and uniformization of the Shimura varieties introduced previously, which are only used in Subsection 5.2 and Subsection 5.3 for the main part of the article. We identify E as a subfield of $\mathbb{C}$ via an element $\tau' \in \Phi_E$. We fix a hermitian space V over E that has signature $(n-1,1)$ at $\tau \coloneqq \tau' \mid F$ and $(n,0)$ at other places.

We first review the integral models of $\mathrm{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^{\infty},\Phi)_{K,L_0}$ in Definition C.16 at good primes, where we assume $\tau' \in \Phi$. Let $\mathfrak{p}$ be a prime of F such that

- $\mathfrak{p}$ is inert E,
- the underlying rational prime p is odd and unramified in E,
- we may choose a self-dual lattice $\Lambda_{\mathfrak{q}}$ in $\mathrm{V}\otimes_F F_{\mathfrak{q}}$ for every $\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}}$, where $\underline{\mathfrak{p}}$ denotes the set of all primes of F above p that are inert in E,
- $L_0 = L_0^p \times (L_0)_p$ in which $(L_0)_p$ is the stabilizer of a self-dual lattice in $\mathbf{W}_0^{\infty} \otimes_{\mathbf{A}^{\infty}} \mathbb{Q}_p$, and L_0^p is sufficiently small.

Fix an isomorphism between E-extensions $\mathbb{C}$ and $E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{ac}}$. We denote by Spl_p the set of primes of F above p that are split in E. We also assume that elements in Φ inducing the same prime in Spl_p induce the same prime of E (under the fixed isomorphism between $\mathbb{C}$ and $E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{ac}}$).

Denote by $E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi,\mathfrak{p}}$ the completion of $E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi}$ in $E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{ac}}$. We now consider subgroups K of the form $K = K^p \times K_p^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \times K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$, where $K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} = \prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} K_{\mathfrak{q}}$ in which $K_{\mathfrak{q}}$ is the stabilizer of $\Lambda_{\mathfrak{q}}$, and K^p is sufficiently small. For $\mathfrak{q} \in \mathrm{Spl}_p$, we denote by $\mathfrak{q}^-$ the unique prime of E that is in Φ and regard $K_p^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$ a subgroup of $\prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\mathrm{Spl}_p} \mathrm{GL}_{E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}}(\mathrm{V}\otimes_E E_{\mathfrak{q}^-})$.

The following definition is a special case of the discussion in [RSZ20, Section 4.1] (but with a slightly finer level structure at Spl_p).

Definition C.19. We define a presheaf $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^{\infty},\Phi)_{K,L_0}$ on $\mathrm{Sch}'_{/O_{E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi,\mathfrak{p}}}}$ as follows: For every object $S \in \mathrm{Sch}'_{/O_{E^{\sharp}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi,\mathfrak{p}}}}$, we let $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^{\infty},\Phi)_{K,L_0}(S)$ be the set of equivalence classes of nonuples $(A_0,i_0,\lambda_0,\eta_0^p;A,i,\lambda,\eta^p,\eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}})$, where

- (A_0, i_0) is an $(E, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})$-abelian scheme over S (in the sense of Remark C.13),
- λ_0 is a $\underline{\mathfrak{p}}$-principal polarization of (A_0, i_0),
- η_0^p is an L_0^p-level structure for (A_0, i_0, λ_0),
- (A, i) is an $(E, \mathrm{sig}_{\mathrm{V},\Phi})$-abelian scheme over S (in the sense of Remark C.13),
- λ is a p-principal polarization of (A, i),
- for chosen geometric point s on every connected component of S,
  - η^p is a $\pi_1(S, s)$-invariant K^p-orbit of isometries

$$\mathrm{V} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathrm{Hom}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_{0s}, \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}), \mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_s, \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}))$$

    of hermitian spaces over $E \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}$. Here, the hermitian pairing is defined similarly as in Definition C.16,
  - η_p^{spl} is a $\pi_1(S, s)$-invariant $K_p^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$-orbit of isomorphisms

$$\prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\mathrm{Spl}_p} \mathrm{V} \otimes_E E_{\mathfrak{q}^-} \xrightarrow{\sim} \prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\mathrm{Spl}_p} \mathrm{Hom}_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}}}\left(A_{0s}[(\mathfrak{q}^-)^\infty], A_s[(\mathfrak{q}^-)^\infty]\right) \otimes_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}}} E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}$$

    of $\prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}$-modules. Note that due to the signature condition in Definition C.12, both $A_{0s}[(\mathfrak{q}^-)^\infty]$ and $A_s[(\mathfrak{q}^-)^\infty]$ are étale $O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}}$-modules.

The equivalence relation is defined in a similar way as in Definition C.16 except that we require the isogeny φ_0 (resp. φ) to be coprime to p (resp. $\underline{\mathfrak{p}}$), and $c \in \mathbb{Z}_{(p)}^\times$.

The presheaf $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K,L_0}$ is a separated scheme in $\mathrm{Sch}'_{/O_{E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi,\mathfrak{p}}}}$, which is proper if and only if V is anisotropic. By Definition C.19 and Remark C.13, we have a canonical morphism

$$\mathbf{q}_0 \colon \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K,L_0} \to \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})_{L_0} \otimes_{O_{E_\Phi,(p)}} O_{E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi,\mathfrak{p}}} \tag{C.7}$$

extending the projection to the second factor in Lemma C.18.

Proposition C.20. *Let* V *be as in the beginning of this subsection. Let* $\mathfrak{p}$ *be a prime of* F *inert in* E *such that its underlying rational prime is unramified in* E*. Denote by* $\underline{\mathfrak{p}}$ *the set of all primes of* F *with the same residue* *characteristic of $\mathfrak{p}$ that are inert in E. We fix a subgroup $K_{\mathfrak{q}} \subseteq \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F_{\mathfrak{q}})$ that is the stabilizer of a self-dual lattice in $\mathrm{V} \otimes_F F_{\mathfrak{q}}$ for every $\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}}$, and put $K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \coloneqq \prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} K_{\mathfrak{q}}$. Then the Shimura variety*

$$\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}} \coloneqq \varprojlim_{K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}} \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_{K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}}$$

(see Remark C.2 for the notation) over E has a (smooth) integral canonical model over $O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}$ in the sense of [Mil92, Definition 2.9]*.*

Proof. Let p be the underlying rational prime of $\mathfrak{p}$. Choose auxiliary data Φ, $\mathbf{W}_0^\infty$ and L_0 as in the previous discussion, such that $L_0 = L_0^p \times (L_0)_p$ in which $(L_0)_p$ is the stabilizer of a self-dual lattice in $\mathbf{W}_0^\infty \otimes_{\mathbf{A}^\infty} \mathbb{Q}_p$ and L_0^p is sufficiently small. Write K for $K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \times K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$. It suffices to consider those $K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$ that are of the form $K^p \times K_p^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$ with K^p sufficiently small.

Put $\mathcal{M} \coloneqq \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})_{L_0} \otimes_{O_{E_\Phi,(p)}} O_{E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi,\mathfrak{p}}}$ as in (C.7), which is a finite étale scheme over $O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}$. Put $M \coloneqq \mathcal{M} \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}_p} \mathbb{Q}_p$. Then we have canonical isomorphisms

$$\begin{aligned}
&\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K,L_0} \times_{\mathcal{M}} M \\
&\quad\simeq \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K,L_0} \otimes_{O_{E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi,\mathfrak{p}}}} E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi,\mathfrak{p}} \\
&\quad\simeq \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_K \times_E \left(\mathrm{M}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})_{L_0} \otimes_{E_\Phi} E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi,\mathfrak{p}}\right) \\
&\quad\simeq \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_K \times_E M
\end{aligned}$$

by Lemma C.18. Take a connected component $\mathcal{M}^0$ of $\mathcal{M}$, which is isomorphic to $\operatorname{Spec} O_{E'}$ for some unramified finite extension $E'/E_{\mathfrak{p}}$, with the generic fiber $M^0 \coloneqq \mathcal{M}^0 \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}_p} \mathbb{Q}_p$. Put $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)^0_{K,L_0} \coloneqq \mathbf{q}_0^{-1}\mathcal{M}^0$. Then we have a canonical isomorphism

$$\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)^0_{K,L_0} \times_{\mathcal{M}^0} M^0 \simeq \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_K \times_E M^0.$$

Thus, it suffices to show that $\varprojlim_{K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}} \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)^0_{K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0}$ is an integral canonical model over $\mathcal{M}^0$. We now modify the proof of [Mil92, Theorem 2.10]. Take an integral regular scheme Y over $\mathcal{M}^0$ such that $U \coloneqq Y \times_{\mathcal{M}^0} M^0$ is dense in Y, with a morphism $\alpha\colon U \to \varprojlim_{K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}} \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)^0_{K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0} \times_{\mathcal{M}^0} M^0$. This is equivalent to giving data $(A_0, i_0, \lambda_0, \eta_0^p; A, i, \lambda, \eta^p, \eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}})$ as in Definition C.19, but with

$$\eta^p\colon \mathrm{V} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathrm{Hom}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_{0\eta}, \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}), \mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_\eta, \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}))$$

being a $\pi_1(U,\eta)$-invariant isometry, and

$$\eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}}\colon \prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \mathrm{V}\otimes_E E_{\mathfrak{q}^-} \xrightarrow{\sim} \prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \mathrm{Hom}_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}}}\left(A_{0\eta}[(\mathfrak{q}^-)^\infty], A_\eta[(\mathfrak{q}^-)^\infty]\right)\otimes_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}}} E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}$$

being a $\pi_1(U,\eta)$-invariant isomorphism, where η is a geometric generic point of Y; and with the partial data $(A_0, i_0, \lambda_0, \eta_0^p)$ extending uniquely to Y. In particular, the action of $\pi_1(U,\eta)$ on $\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_{0\eta}, \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p})$ factors through $\pi_1(Y,\eta)$, and that on $\mathrm{Hom}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_{0\eta}, \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}), \mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_\eta, \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}))$ is trivial. Thus, the action of $\pi_1(U,\eta)$ on $\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_\eta, \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p})$ factors through $\pi_1(Y,\eta)$. By [Mil92, Propositions 2.11, 2.13, 2.14], the triple (A, i_A, θ_A) extends uniquely to Y. Then it is clear that $(\eta^p, \eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}})$ extends uniquely as well.

We then conclude that $\varprojlim_{K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}} \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)^0_{K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}, L_0}$ is an integral canonical model over $\mathcal{M}^0$. The proposition follows. □

Definition C.21. We denote by $\mathcal{S}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}}$ the integral canonical model of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}}$ over $O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}$ in Proposition C.20, on which the action of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})$ extends uniquely by the extension property. For an open compact subgroup $K\subseteq \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty) = \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^\infty)$ of the form $K = K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}\times K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$, we put

$$\mathcal{S}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_K \coloneqq \mathcal{S}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}}/K^{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$$

which we refer as the *canonical integral model* of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_K$ over $O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}$. It is proper/smooth if $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_K$ is.

Remark C.22. The extension property of integral canonical models together with Lemma C.18 implies that we have a canonical isomorphism

$$\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K,L_0} \simeq \mathcal{S}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau'})_K \times_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}}} \left(\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})_{L_0} \otimes_{O_{E_\Phi,(p)}} O_{E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi,\mathfrak{p}}}\right)$$

under which $\mathbf{q}_0$ (C.7) corresponds to the projection to the second factor.

Remark C.23. Proposition C.20 is slightly stronger than the main result in [Kis10], as the latter has to assume that K_p is hyperspecial maximal.

At last, we review the uniformization of $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K,L_0}$ along the basic locus, which is only used in Subsection 5.3. Let $E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}$ be the maximal unramified extension of $E_{\mathfrak{p}}$ inside $E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{ac}}$. Let $k \coloneqq O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}\otimes_{\mathbb{Z}}\mathbb{F}_p$ be the residue field of $E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}$. Put

$$\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)^{\mathrm{nr}}_{K,L_0} \coloneqq \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)_{K,L_0}\otimes_{O_{E^\sharp_{\mathrm{V},\Phi,\mathfrak{p}}}} O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}$$

and

$$\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^\infty,\Phi)^{\mathrm{nr}}_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0} \coloneqq \varprojlim_{K^p}\varprojlim_{K^{\mathfrak{p}}_p}\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^\infty,\Phi)^{\mathrm{nr}}_{K^pK^{\mathfrak{p}}_pK_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0}.$$

Definition C.24. For an algebraically closed field k' containing k, we say that a k'-point $(A_0,i_0,\lambda_0,\eta_0^p;A,i,\lambda,\eta^p,\eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}}) \in \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^\infty,\Phi)^{\mathrm{nr}}_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0}(k')$ is *supersingular* if the p-divisible group $A[\mathfrak{p}^\infty]$ is supersingular.

Let $O^\wedge_{E^{\mathrm{nr}}_{\mathfrak{p}}}$ be the completion of $O_{E^{\mathrm{nr}}_{\mathfrak{p}}}$. Denote by $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^\infty,\Phi)^{\mathrm{ss}}_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0}$ the supersingular locus of $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^\infty,\Phi)^{\mathrm{nr}}_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0}\otimes_{O_{E^{\mathrm{nr}}_{\mathfrak{p}}}} k$, which is a Zariski closed subset. Denote by $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^\infty,\Phi)^{\mathrm{ss},\wedge}_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0}$ the completion of $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^\infty,\Phi)^{\mathrm{nr}}_{K,L_0}$ along $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^\infty,\Phi)^{\mathrm{ss}}_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0}$, which is a formal scheme over $O^\wedge_{E^{\mathrm{nr}}_{\mathfrak{p}}}$. The description of the uniformization of $\mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^\infty,\Phi)^{\mathrm{ss},\wedge}_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0}$ depends on the choice of a point

$$\boldsymbol{P} = (\boldsymbol{A}_0,\boldsymbol{i}_0,\boldsymbol{\lambda}_0,\boldsymbol{\eta}_0^p;\boldsymbol{A},\boldsymbol{i},\boldsymbol{\lambda},\boldsymbol{\eta}^p,\boldsymbol{\eta}_p^{\mathrm{spl}}) \in \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^\infty,\Phi)^{\mathrm{nr}}_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0}(O_{E^{\mathrm{nr}}_{\mathfrak{p}}}) \tag{C.8}$$

such that $\boldsymbol{P}_k$ is supersingular. In particular, we have the induced section

$$\boldsymbol{P}^\wedge\colon\ \mathrm{Spf}\,O^\wedge_{E^{\mathrm{nr}}_{\mathfrak{p}}} \to \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^\infty,\Phi)^{\mathrm{ss},\wedge}_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0}. \tag{C.9}$$

We denote the base change of $(\boldsymbol{A}_0,\boldsymbol{i}_0,\boldsymbol{\lambda}_0;\boldsymbol{A},\boldsymbol{i},\boldsymbol{\lambda})$ to k by $(\boldsymbol{A}_{0k},\boldsymbol{i}_{0k},\boldsymbol{\lambda}_{0k};\boldsymbol{A}_k,\boldsymbol{i}_k,\boldsymbol{\lambda}_k)$. Moreover, we use $\mathrm{Spec}\,k$ as the reference point in the level structures $(\boldsymbol{\eta}_0^p;\boldsymbol{\eta}^p,\boldsymbol{\eta}_p^{\mathrm{spl}})$. We now attach to $\boldsymbol{P}$ two objects: a formal scheme $\mathcal{N}$ over $O^\wedge_{E^{\mathrm{nr}}_{\mathfrak{p}}}$, and a new hermitian space $\bar{\mathrm{V}}$ over E.

- By a slight abuse of notation, let $(\boldsymbol{X},\boldsymbol{i},\boldsymbol{\lambda})$ be the supersingular unitary $O_{F_{\mathfrak{p}}}$-module induced from $(\boldsymbol{A}[\mathfrak{p}^\infty],\boldsymbol{i}[\mathfrak{p}^\infty],\boldsymbol{\lambda}[\mathfrak{p}^\infty])$ via [Mih20, Theorem 3.3]. Similarly, we have $(\boldsymbol{X}_0,\boldsymbol{i}_0,\boldsymbol{\lambda}_0)$ obtained from $(\boldsymbol{A}_0,\boldsymbol{i}_0,\boldsymbol{\lambda}_0)$. Let $\mathcal{N}$ be the relative Rapoport–Zink space parameterizing quasi-isogenies of the supersingular unitary $O_{F_{\mathfrak{p}}}$-module $(\boldsymbol{X}_k,\boldsymbol{i}_k,\boldsymbol{\lambda}_k)$ of signature $(n-1,1)$ as introduced in Subsection 1.3, which is a formal scheme over $O^\wedge_{E^{\mathrm{nr}}_{\mathfrak{p}}}$. In particular, the point $\boldsymbol{P}$ induces a section

$$\boldsymbol{P}^\wedge_{\mathrm{loc}}\colon\ \mathrm{Spf}\,O^\wedge_{E^{\mathrm{nr}}_{\mathfrak{p}}} \to \mathcal{N}. \tag{C.10}$$

- Now we define the new hermitian space. Put

$$\bar{\mathrm{V}} \coloneqq \mathrm{Hom}_k((\boldsymbol{A}_{0k},\boldsymbol{i}_{0k}),(\boldsymbol{A}_k,\boldsymbol{i}_k))_{\mathbb{Q}},$$

which is an E-vector space through $\boldsymbol{i}_{0k}$. We define a map

$$(\, , \,)_{\bar{\mathrm{V}}} \colon \bar{\mathrm{V}} \times \bar{\mathrm{V}} \to E$$

given by the formula

$$(x,y)_{\bar{\mathrm{V}}} = \boldsymbol{i}_{0k}^{-1}\left(\boldsymbol{\lambda}_{0k}^{\vee} \circ y^{\vee} \circ \boldsymbol{\lambda}_k \circ x\right) \in \boldsymbol{i}_{0k}^{-1}\,\mathrm{End}_k((\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}, \boldsymbol{i}_{0k})) = E, \tag{C.11}$$

which is a hermitian form on $\bar{\mathrm{V}}$.

Lemma C.25. *The hermitian space* $\bar{\mathrm{V}}, (\, , \,)_{\bar{\mathrm{V}}}$ *has the following properties:*

(1) $\bar{\mathrm{V}}$ *is of dimension* n *over* E.
(2) $\bar{\mathrm{V}}$ *is totally positive definite.*
(3) The composite map

$$\bar{\mathrm{V}} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p} \to \mathrm{Hom}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}, \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}), \mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(\boldsymbol{A}_k, \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p})) \xrightarrow{(\boldsymbol{\eta}^p)^{-1}} \mathrm{V} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}$$

is an isomorphism of hermitian spaces over $F \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}$.
(4) The composite map

$$\prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\mathrm{Spl}_p} \bar{\mathrm{V}} \otimes_E E_{\mathfrak{q}^-} \to \prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\mathrm{Spl}_p} \mathrm{Hom}_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}}}\left(\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}[(\mathfrak{q}^-)^\infty], \boldsymbol{A}_k[(\mathfrak{q}^-)^\infty]\right) \otimes_{O_{E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}}} E_{\mathfrak{q}^-} \xrightarrow{(\boldsymbol{\eta}_p^{\mathrm{spl}})^{-1}} \prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\mathrm{Spl}_p} \mathrm{V} \otimes_E E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}$$

is an isomorphism of $\prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\mathrm{Spl}_p} E_{\mathfrak{q}^-}$*-modules.*
(5) For every $\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}}$, *the canonical map*

$$\bar{\mathrm{V}} \otimes_F F_{\mathfrak{q}} \to \mathrm{Hom}_k((\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}[\mathfrak{q}^\infty], \boldsymbol{i}_{0k}[\mathfrak{q}^\infty]), (\boldsymbol{A}_k[\mathfrak{q}^\infty], \boldsymbol{i}_k[\mathfrak{q}^\infty])) \otimes_{O_{F_{\mathfrak{q}}}} F_{\mathfrak{q}}$$

is an isomorphism of $E_{\mathfrak{q}}$*-vector spaces.*
(6) For every $\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}} \setminus \{\mathfrak{p}\}$,

$$\bar{\Lambda}_{\mathfrak{q}} \coloneqq \mathrm{Hom}_k((\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}[\mathfrak{q}^\infty], \boldsymbol{i}_{0k}[\mathfrak{q}^\infty]), (\boldsymbol{A}_k[\mathfrak{q}^\infty], \boldsymbol{i}_k[\mathfrak{q}^\infty]))$$

is a self-dual lattice in $\bar{\mathrm{V}} \otimes_F F_{\mathfrak{q}}$.
(7) $\bar{\mathrm{V}} \otimes_F F_{\mathfrak{p}}$ *does not admit a self-dual lattice.*

Proof. We first show that the canonical map

$$\bar{\mathrm{V}} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{Q}_p \to \mathrm{Hom}_k((\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}[p^\infty], \boldsymbol{i}_{0k}[p^\infty]), (\boldsymbol{A}_k[p^\infty], \boldsymbol{i}_k[p^\infty])) \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}_p} \mathbb{Q}_p \tag{C.12}$$

is an isomorphism. Let O_D be the $O_{F,(p)}$-algebra of endomorphisms of $(\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}, \boldsymbol{i}_{0k} \mid O_{F,(p)}, \boldsymbol{\lambda}_{0k})$, and put $D := O_D \otimes_{O_{F,(p)}} F$. Then D is a totally definite (division) quaternion algebra over F which contains E via $\boldsymbol{i}_{0k}$. We write $D = E \oplus Ej$ for some element $j \in O_D \setminus pO_D$ such that $j^{-1}ej = e^{\mathtt{c}}$ for every $e \in E$. Choose an element $f \in O_F$ such that $f \in \mathfrak{p}$ but $f \notin \mathfrak{q}$ for every other prime $\mathfrak{q}$ of F above p; and put $j' := j + f$. We define a new action $\boldsymbol{i}'_{0k}$ of $O_{E,(p)}$ on $\boldsymbol{B}_k$ via the formula $\boldsymbol{i}'_{0k}(e) = j'^{-1} \circ \boldsymbol{i}_{0k}(e) \circ j'$. Then $(\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}, \boldsymbol{i}'_{0k})$ is an (E, Φ')-abelian scheme over k, where $\Phi' := (\Phi^{\mathtt{c}} \setminus \{\tau'^{\mathtt{c}}\}) \cup \{\tau'\}$, with a polarization $\boldsymbol{\lambda}'_{0k} := (j')^* \boldsymbol{\lambda}_{0k}$. Now by [RZ96, Proposition 6.29], $(\boldsymbol{A}_k, \boldsymbol{i}_k)$ is quasi-isogenous to $(\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}, \boldsymbol{i}_{0k})^{n-1} \times (\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}, \boldsymbol{i}'_{0k})$. In particular, (C.12) is an isomorphism. From this, (1), (3), (4), and (5) follow immediately. Part (2) can be proved in the same way as [KR14, Lemma 2.7]. Part (7) is a consequence of (1–6) and the Hasse principle.

It remains to show (6). By the above discussion, $(\boldsymbol{A}_k[\mathfrak{q}^\infty], \boldsymbol{i}_k[\mathfrak{q}^\infty])$ is quasi-isogenous to $(\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}[\mathfrak{q}^\infty], \boldsymbol{i}_{0k}[\mathfrak{q}^\infty])^{\oplus n}$ for $\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}} \setminus \{\mathfrak{p}\}$. Then they must be isomorphic. In particular, the induced hermitian form on $\bar{\Lambda}_{\mathfrak{q}}$ is given by the identity matrix under some basis. Thus, we obtain (6). □

Lemma C.25(3,4) gives rise to an isomorphism

$$\iota_{\boldsymbol{P}} \colon \bar{\mathrm{V}} \otimes_F \mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \to \mathrm{V} \otimes_F \mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\underline{\mathfrak{p}}} \tag{C.13}$$

of hermitian spaces over $\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\underline{\mathfrak{p}}}$. Let $\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}$ be the stabilizer of $\bar{\Lambda}_{\mathfrak{q}}$ in Lemma C.25(6) for every $\mathfrak{q} \in \underline{\mathfrak{p}} \setminus \{\mathfrak{p}\}$, which is a hyperspecial maximal subgroup of $\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F_{\mathfrak{q}})$.

Let $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})^\wedge_{L_0}$ be the completion of $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})_{L_0} \otimes_{O_{E_\Phi,(p)}} O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}$ along the special fiber, which is isomorphic to a finite disjoint union of $\mathrm{Spf}\, O^\wedge_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}$. Then (C.7) induces a morphism

$$\mathbf{q}_0^\wedge \colon \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V}, \mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi)^{\mathrm{ss},\wedge}_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0} \to \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{W}_0^\infty, \Phi^{\mathtt{c}})^\wedge_{L_0}$$

of formal schemes over $O^\wedge_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}$.

Proposition C.26. *The chosen point* $\boldsymbol{P}$ (C.8) *induces the following Cartesian diagram*

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F)\backslash\left(\mathcal{N}\times\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\mathfrak{p}})/\prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}\backslash\{\mathfrak{p}\}}\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}\right) & \longrightarrow & \mathrm{Spf}\, O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}^{\wedge} \\ \Big\downarrow{\scriptstyle \mathtt{u}_{\boldsymbol{P}}} & & \Big\downarrow{\scriptstyle \mathbf{q}_0^{\wedge}\circ\boldsymbol{P}^{\wedge}} \\ \mathcal{M}(\mathrm{V},\mathbf{W}_0^{\infty},\Phi)_{K_{\underline{\mathfrak{p}}},L_0}^{\mathrm{ss},\wedge} & \xrightarrow{\quad\mathbf{q}_0^{\wedge}\quad} & \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{W}_0^{\infty},\Phi^{\mathtt{c}})_{L_0}^{\wedge} \end{array}$$

of formal schemes over $O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}^{\wedge}$*, satisfying*

- $\mathtt{u}_{\boldsymbol{P}}\circ(\boldsymbol{P}_{\mathrm{loc}}^{\wedge},1)=\boldsymbol{P}^{\wedge}$ *(see* (C.9) *and* (C.10)*), and*
- $\mathtt{u}_{\boldsymbol{P}}\circ\mathtt{T}_{\bar{g}}=\mathtt{T}_g\circ\mathtt{u}_{\boldsymbol{P}}$ *for every* $g\in\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})$ *and* $\bar{g}\in\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\underline{\mathfrak{p}}})$ *that correspond under* $\iota_{\boldsymbol{P}}$ (C.13)*, where* $\mathtt{T}_g$ *(resp.* $\mathtt{T}_{\bar{g}}$*) denotes the Hecke translation on the target (resp. source) of* $\mathtt{u}_{\boldsymbol{P}}$*.*

Proof. The proof is very similar to [RZ96, Theorem 6.30]. For readers' convenience, we will describe the morphism

$$\mathtt{v}_{\boldsymbol{P}}\colon\mathcal{M}_{\boldsymbol{P}}\to\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F)\backslash\left(\mathcal{N}\times\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\mathfrak{p}})/\prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}\backslash\{\mathfrak{p}\}}\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}\right),\tag{C.14}$$

where $\mathcal{M}_{\boldsymbol{P}}$ is the pullback of $\mathbf{q}_0^{\wedge}$ along $\mathbf{q}_0^{\wedge}\circ\boldsymbol{P}^{\wedge}$, for which $\mathtt{u}_{\boldsymbol{P}}$ is the inverse. This is the hardest step; and in particular, we will see how this morphism depends on $\boldsymbol{P}$.

Let S be a connected scheme in $\mathrm{Sch}'_{/O_{E_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}}^{\wedge}}$ on which p is locally nilpotent, with a chosen geometric point $s\in S(k)$. Take a point

$$P=(A_0,i_0,\lambda_0,\eta_0^p;A,i,\lambda,\eta^p,\eta_p^{\mathrm{spl}})\in\mathcal{M}_{\boldsymbol{P}}(S),$$

where $(A_0,i_0,\lambda_0,\eta_0^p)$ is the base change of $(\boldsymbol{A}_0,\boldsymbol{i}_0,\boldsymbol{\lambda}_0,\boldsymbol{\eta}_0^p)$ to S. By [RZ96, Proposition 6.29], we can choose an O_E-linear quasi-isogeny

$$\rho\colon A\times_S S_k\to\boldsymbol{A}_k\times_k S_k$$

such that $\rho^*\boldsymbol{\lambda}_k=\lambda_k$. Then $(A[\mathfrak{p}^\infty],i[\mathfrak{p}^\infty],\lambda[\mathfrak{p}^\infty];\rho[\mathfrak{p}^\infty])$ can be regarded as an element in $\mathcal{N}(S)$ by [Mih20, Theorem 3.3]. The composite map

$$\begin{aligned}&\bar{\mathrm{V}}\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}\\ &\quad\xrightarrow{\iota_{\boldsymbol{P}}}\mathrm{V}\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}\xrightarrow{\eta^p}\mathrm{Hom}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(\boldsymbol{A}_{0k},\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}),\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(A_s,\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}))\end{aligned}$$

$$\xrightarrow{\rho_{s*}\circ} \mathrm{Hom}_{E\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}}(\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(\boldsymbol{A}_{0k},\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}),\mathrm{H}_1^{\text{ét}}(\boldsymbol{A}_k,\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p})) = \bar{\mathrm{V}}\otimes_{\mathbb{Q}}\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p}$$

is an isometry, which gives rise to an element $g_P^p \in \mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,p})$. The same process will produce an element $g_{P,p}^{\mathrm{spl}} \in \prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\mathrm{Spl}_p}\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F_{\mathfrak{q}})$. For every element $\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}\setminus\{\mathfrak{p}\}$, the image of the map

$$\begin{aligned}\rho_{s*}\circ\colon\ &\mathrm{Hom}_k((\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}[\mathfrak{q}^\infty],\boldsymbol{i}_{0k}[\mathfrak{q}^\infty]),(A_s[\mathfrak{q}^\infty],i_s[\mathfrak{q}^\infty]))\\ &\to \mathrm{Hom}_k((\boldsymbol{A}_{0k}[\mathfrak{q}^\infty],\boldsymbol{i}_{0k}[\mathfrak{q}^\infty]),(\boldsymbol{A}_k[\mathfrak{q}^\infty],\boldsymbol{i}_k[\mathfrak{q}^\infty]))\otimes_{O_{F_{\mathfrak{q}}}}F_{\mathfrak{q}} = \bar{\mathrm{V}}\otimes_F F_{\mathfrak{q}}\end{aligned}$$

is a self-dual lattice, say $\Lambda_{P,\mathfrak{q}}$. Therefore, there exists a unique element $g_{P,\mathfrak{q}} \in \mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F_{\mathfrak{q}})/\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}$ such that $g_{P,\mathfrak{q}}\Lambda_{P,\mathfrak{q}} = \bar{\Lambda}_{\mathfrak{q}}$. Together, we obtain an element

$$\left(\rho[\mathfrak{p}^\infty], g_P^p, g_{P,p}^{\mathrm{spl}}, (g_{P,\mathfrak{q}})_{\mathfrak{q}}\right) \in \mathcal{N}(S)\times\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(\mathbf{A}_F^{\infty,\mathfrak{p}})/\prod_{\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}\setminus\{\mathfrak{p}\}}\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}$$

depending on the choice of ρ. However, changing ρ will result the left multiplication by an element in $\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F)$. Thus, the element

$$\mathtt{v}_{\boldsymbol{P}}(P) \coloneqq \left((A[\mathfrak{p}^\infty], i[\mathfrak{p}^\infty], \lambda[\mathfrak{p}^\infty]; \rho[\mathfrak{p}^\infty]), g_P^p, g_{P,p}^{\mathrm{spl}}, (g_{P,\mathfrak{q}})_{\mathfrak{q}}\right)$$

is a well-defined element in the right-hand side of (C.14). The construction of the inverse of $\mathtt{v}_{\boldsymbol{P}}$, which is nothing but $\mathtt{u}_{\boldsymbol{P}}$, is easy by Dieudonné theory. We leave the details to the readers; it is the same argument in [RZ96]. ☐

Remark C.27. In fact, the morphism $\mathtt{u}_{\boldsymbol{P}}$ in Proposition C.26 is compatible with more Hecke operators. Consider a prime $\mathfrak{q}\in\underline{\mathfrak{p}}\setminus\{\mathfrak{p}\}$. For every double coset $K_{\mathfrak{q}}gK_{\mathfrak{q}}\subseteq\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F_{\mathfrak{q}})$, we have the Hecke correspondence $\mathtt{T}_{K_{\mathfrak{q}}gK_{\mathfrak{q}}}$ on the target of $\mathtt{u}_{\boldsymbol{P}}$ which is simply the Zariski closure of the usual Hecke correspondence on the generic fiber; it is in fact étale. Then we have $\mathtt{u}_{\boldsymbol{P}}^*\mathtt{T}_{K_{\mathfrak{q}}gK_{\mathfrak{q}}} = \mathtt{T}_{\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}\bar{g}\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}}$ if $K_{\mathfrak{q}}gK_{\mathfrak{q}} = \bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}\bar{g}\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}$ under the canonical isomorphism $K_{\mathfrak{q}}\backslash\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F_{\mathfrak{q}})/K_{\mathfrak{q}}\simeq\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}\backslash\mathrm{U}(\bar{\mathrm{V}})(F_{\mathfrak{q}})/\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}$. Here, $\mathtt{T}_{\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}\bar{g}\bar{K}_{\mathfrak{q}}}$ denotes the set-theoretical Hecke correspondence on the source of $\mathtt{u}_{\boldsymbol{P}}$.

Appendix D. Cohomology of unitary Shimura curves

In this appendix, we compute the cohomology of Shimura curves associated to *isometry* groups of hermitian spaces of rank 2, as Galois–Hecke modules. In Subsection D.1, we collect some results about local oscillator representations of unitary groups of general rank. In Subsection D.2, we recall some facts and introduce some notation about cohomology of Shimura varieties in general. The last two subsections concern the cohomology of unitary Shimura curves, for the statements and for the proof, respectively. These statements are only used in the proof of Theorem 4.15 and Theorem 4.18 in the main part of the article.

D.1. Oscillator representations of local unitary groups

Let F be a local field whose characteristic is not 2. Let E be an étale F-algebra of rank 2. Denote by $\mathtt{c}$ the unique nontrivial involution on E that fixes F, and put $E^- \coloneqq \{x \in E \mid x + x^{\mathtt{c}} = 0\}$ and $E^1 \coloneqq \{x \in E \mid xx^{\mathtt{c}} = 1\}$. Let $\mathrm{V}, (\ ,\ )_{\mathrm{V}}$ be a (non-degenerate) hermitian space over E (with respect to $\mathtt{c}$) of rank $n \geqslant 2$.

We recall the construction of oscillator representations of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})$ in three steps.

Step 1: Choose an element $\varepsilon \in E^{-\times}/\,\mathrm{N}_{E/F}\,E^{\times}$. Let V_ε be the underlying F-vector space of V equipped with the form $\mathrm{Tr}_{E/F}\,\varepsilon(\ ,\ )_{\mathrm{V}}$, which becomes a symplectic space.[21] Let $\mathrm{Mp}(\mathrm{V}_\varepsilon)$ be the metaplectic group of V_ε with center $\mathbb{C}^1$. Then we have the oscillator representation $\omega(\varepsilon)$ of $\mathrm{Mp}(\mathrm{V}_\varepsilon)$ using the standard additive character ψ_F.

Step 2: Choose a character $\mu\colon E^{\times} \to \mathbb{C}^1$ such that $\mu \mid F^{\times}$ is the unique character whose kernel is exactly $\mathrm{N}_{E/F}\,E^{\times}$. Then we have the induced homomorphism $\iota_\mu\colon \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}) \to \mathrm{Mp}(\mathrm{V}_\varepsilon)$ (see, for example, [HKS96, Section 1]). Put $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon) \coloneqq \omega(\varepsilon) \circ \iota_\mu$.

Step 3: Choose a character $\chi\colon E^1 \to \mathbb{C}^1$. Let $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ be the maximal quotient of the representation $\omega(\varepsilon,\mu)$ of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})$ with central character χ.

For χ in Step 3, we define a character $\check{\chi}$ of $E^{\times}$ via the formula $\check{\chi}(x) = \chi(x/x^{\mathtt{c}})$.

Lemma D.1. *Suppose that F is nonarchimedean. Then $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ is irreducible and admissible. Moreover,*

(1) $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ is zero if and only if E is a field, V is anisotropic (in particular $n = 2$), and $\check{\chi} = \mu^2$.
(2) The contragredient representation of $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ is isomorphic to $\omega(\mu^{\mathtt{c}}, -\varepsilon, \chi^{-1})$, where $\mu^{\mathtt{c}} \coloneqq \mu \circ \mathtt{c}$ as usual.
(3) If $n \geqslant 3$, then $\omega(\mu',\varepsilon',\chi')$ is isomorphic to $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ if and only if $(\mu',\varepsilon',\chi') = (\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$.

[21] More precisely, we have to choose an element in $E^{-\times}$ in the coset ε; and it is known that the resulting oscillator representation depends only on ε.

(4) If $n=2$ and $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ is nonzero, then $\omega(\mu',\varepsilon',\chi')$ is isomorphic to $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ if and only if either $(\mu',\varepsilon',\chi')=(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$, or $\mu'=\mu^{\mathtt{c}}\check{\chi}$, $\chi'=\chi$, and $\varepsilon'=\varepsilon$ (resp. $\varepsilon'\neq\varepsilon$) when V is isotropic (resp. anisotropic).

Proof. We consider first the case where $E=F\times F$. We identify $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})$ with $\mathrm{GL}_n(F)$ and E^- with F through the first factor; and write $\mu=\nu\boxtimes\nu^{-1}$. Note that the first component of $\check{\chi}$ is simply χ. Let $\mathrm{Q}_{n-1,1}$ be the standard parabolic subgroup of GL_n whose Levi is $\mathrm{GL}_{n-1}\times\mathrm{GL}_1$. Then $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ is isomorphic to the unitary induction from $\mathrm{Q}_{n-1,1}(F)$ to $\mathrm{GL}_n(F)$ of the (unitary) character $(\nu\circ\det)\boxtimes\chi\nu^{1-n}$ of $\mathrm{GL}_{n-1}(F)\times\mathrm{GL}_1(F)$ (hence of $\mathrm{Q}_{n-1,1}(F)$). See for example [GR90, 2.6]. The lemma follows from such description.

Now we assume that E is a field. The fact that $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ is irreducible is a special case of the Howe duality; see for example [GT16, Theorem 1.1(1)].

For (1), the fact that $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ is nonzero unless in the exceptional case in (1) follows from the persistence property [HKS96, Proposition 5.1(iii)], and the first occurrence speculation [HKS96, Speculation 7.5 & Speculation 7.6] (which has been proved as [SZ15, Theorem 1.10]). Note that in the exceptional case, the first occurrence of the theta lifting of the trivial character in the split even tower is 0; therefore its first occurrence in the nonsplit even tower is 4. See [HKS96, p.986] for more details.

Note that, since E^1 is compact, we have a canonical isomorphism of representations of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})$

$$\omega(\mu,\varepsilon)\simeq\bigoplus_{\chi}\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi).$$

For (2), note that under the canonical isomorphism $\mathrm{Mp}(\mathrm{V}_\varepsilon)\simeq\mathrm{Mp}(\mathrm{V}_{-\varepsilon})$, the contragredient of $\omega(\varepsilon)$ is isomorphic to $\omega(-\varepsilon)$. Moreover, under such isomorphism, ι_μ coincides with $\iota_{\mu^{\mathtt{c}}}$ by [HKS96, Lemma 1.1 & (1.8)]. Therefore, $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon)$ is contragredient to $\omega(\mu^{\mathtt{c}},-\varepsilon)$. Since E^1 is compact, we have a canonical isomorphism $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon)\simeq\bigoplus_\chi\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$. Thus, $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ is contragredient to $\omega(\mu^{\mathtt{c}},-\varepsilon,\chi^{-1})$ as both are irreducible with inverse central character, or both are zero.

For (3), it is known when $n=3$ by [GR90, Proposition 5.1.4]. In fact, the same proof also works for $n>3$.

For (4), we first have $\chi=\chi'$. By the description of endoscopic packets for in [GGP12b, Section 8], we must have either $\mu'=\mu$ or $\mu'=\mu^{\mathtt{c}}\check{\chi}$. There are two cases.

Suppose that $\mu^{\mathtt{c}}\check{\chi}=\mu$. Then $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)=\{0\}$ when V is anisotropic; and $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ is not isomorphic to $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon',\chi)$ when V is isotropic and $\varepsilon'\neq\varepsilon$. Thus, (4) follows.

Suppose that $\mu^{\mathtt{c}}\check{\chi} \neq \mu$. Then the packet has four members, and we need to show that $\omega(\mu, \varepsilon, \chi) \simeq \omega(\mu^{\mathtt{c}}\check{\chi}, \varepsilon', \chi)$ for $\varepsilon' = \varepsilon$ (resp. $\varepsilon' \neq \varepsilon$) when V is isotropic (resp. anisotropic). We adopt the notation in [GGP12b, Section 8]. Let M be the two-dimensional conjugate symplectic representation associated to the packet. Then M has two non-isomorphic one dimensional conjugate symplectic representations. We write $M = M_1^\bullet \oplus M_2^\bullet = M_1^\circ \oplus M_2^\circ$ for the two different ways of ordering of direct summands. Thus, we obtain two ways of labelling for the four members in the packet, say $\{\pi_\bullet^{++}, \pi_\bullet^{--}, \pi_\bullet^{+-}, \pi_\bullet^{-+}\}$ and $\{\pi_\circ^{++}, \pi_\circ^{--}, \pi_\circ^{+-}, \pi_\circ^{-+}\}$, respectively. Then (4) is equivalent to the isomorphisms $\pi_\bullet^{++} \simeq \pi_\circ^{++}$, $\pi_\bullet^{--} \simeq \pi_\circ^{--}$, $\pi_\bullet^{+-} \simeq \pi_\circ^{-+}$, and $\pi_\bullet^{-+} \simeq \pi_\circ^{+-}$. However, these isomorphisms are consequences of [GGP12b, Theorem 10.2]. $\square$

Now we take $F = \mathbb{R}$ and $E = \mathbb{C}$. Let (p, q) be the signature of V. Then we may identify U(V) with $\mathrm{U}(p,q)_\mathbb{R}$, the subgroup of $\mathrm{Res}_{\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{R}}\,\mathrm{GL}_n$ of elements preserving the hermitian form given by the matrix $\begin{pmatrix} \mathrm{I}_p & \\ & -\mathrm{I}_q \end{pmatrix}$. Denote by $\mathfrak{u}_{p,q}$ the Lie algebra of $\mathrm{U}(p,q)_\mathbb{R}$ and fix a maximal compact subgroup $\mathrm{K}_{p,q}$ of $\mathrm{U}(p,q)_\mathbb{R}(\mathbb{R})$. In the construction of $\omega(\mu, \varepsilon, \chi)$, the three parameters have the following possibilities:

$$\mu_m(z) = \arg(z)^m,\ m \text{ odd integer}; \qquad \varepsilon = \pm i; \qquad \chi_l(z) = z^l,\ l \in \mathbb{Z}.$$

To shorten notation, we denote by $\omega_{p,q}^{m,\pm,l}$ the representation $\omega(\mu_m, \pm i, \chi_l)$ of $\mathrm{U}(p,q)_\mathbb{R}$. It is well-known (see, for example, [SW78, Section 4]) that $\omega_{p,q}^{m,\pm,l}$ is irreducible.

By the computation in [BMM16, Section 5], up to equivalence, there are only two irreducible unitary representations π of $\mathrm{U}(n-1,1)_\mathbb{R}$ such that $\mathrm{H}^1(\mathfrak{u}_{n-1,1}, \mathrm{K}_{n-1,1}; \pi) \neq \{0\}$, in which case the cohomology has dimension 1 for both representations. Let us label them by $\pi_{n-1,1}^{1,0}$ and $\pi_{n-1,1}^{0,1}$ in the way that $\mathrm{H}^1(\mathfrak{u}_{n-1,1}, \mathrm{K}_{n-1,1}; \pi_{n-1,1}^{1,0})$ and $\mathrm{H}^1(\mathfrak{u}_{n-1,1}, \mathrm{K}_{n-1,1}; \pi_{n-1,1}^{0,1})$ have Hodge types $(1,0)$ and $(0,1)$, respectively.

Lemma D.2. *Let the notation be as above.*

(1) Among the representations $\omega_{n,0}^{m,\pm,l}$, only $\omega_{n,0}^{1,+,0}$ and $\omega_{n,0}^{-1,-,0}$ are the trivial character.
(2) If $n \geqslant 3$, then in the set $\{\omega_{n-1,1}^{m,\pm,l}\}$, only $\omega_{n-1,1}^{-1,-,0}$ (resp. $\omega_{n-1,1}^{1,+,0}$) is isomorphic to $\pi_{n-1,1}^{1,0}$ (resp. $\pi_{n-1,1}^{0,1}$).
(3) If $n = 2$, then in the set $\{\omega_{1,1}^{m,\pm,l}\}$, only $\omega_{1,1}^{-1,-,0}$ and $\omega_{1,1}^{1,-,0}$ (resp. $\omega_{1,1}^{1,+,0}$ and $\omega_{1,1}^{-1,+,0}$) are isomorphic to $\pi_{1,1}^{1,0}$ (resp. $\pi_{1,1}^{0,1}$).

Proof. The explicit formulae for the $\mathrm{K}_{p,q}$-type of $\omega_{p,q}^{m,\pm,l}$ can be found in, for example, [KK07, Theorem 5.4] with $p'+q'=1$. In particular, (1) follows directly.

For (2) and (3), it is shown in [BMM16, Section 5] that both $\pi_{n-1,1}^{1,0}$ and $\pi_{n-1,1}^{0,1}$ are isomorphic to some $\omega_{n-1,1}^{m,\pm,l}$. Comparing the formula for the highest weights in [BMM16, 5.7] with $p=n-1, q=1, a+b=1(\leqslant p)$ with [KK07, Theorem 5.4], we obtain the assertions. ☐

D.2. Setup for cohomology of Shimura varieties

Let us recall some general facts about cohomology of Shimura varieties. Let (G,h) be a Shimura data with $E\subseteq\mathbb{C}$ its reflex field. In particular, G is a reductive group over $\mathbb{Q}$. Let ξ be an algebraic complex representation of G.[22] Then it induces a complex local system $\mathscr{L}_\xi$ on $\{\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K\otimes_E\mathbb{C}\}$. Let $\mathrm{H}^i_{(2)}(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K(\mathbb{C}),\mathscr{L}_\xi)$ be the i-th L^2-cohomology of the complex manifold $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K(\mathbb{C})$ with coefficients in $\mathscr{L}_\xi$. Put

$$\mathrm{H}^i_{(2)}(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathscr{L}_\xi)\coloneqq\varinjlim_K\mathrm{H}^i_{(2)}(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K(\mathbb{C}),\mathscr{L}_\xi),$$

which is a smooth representation of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$. By the Matsushima formula for L^2-cohomology, we have an isomorphism

$$\mathrm{H}^i_{(2)}(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathscr{L}_\xi)\simeq\bigoplus_\pi m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi)\mathrm{H}^i(\mathfrak{g},\mathrm{K}_\mathrm{G};\xi_\infty\otimes\pi_\infty)\otimes\pi^\infty \tag{D.1}$$

of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$-modules, where

- $\mathfrak{g}\coloneqq\mathrm{Lie}\,\mathrm{G}_\mathbb{R}$, and K_G is a maximal connected compact subgroup of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbb{R})$,
- ξ_∞ is the associated $(\mathfrak{g},\mathrm{K}_\mathrm{G})$-module of ξ, and
- $\pi=\pi_\infty\otimes\pi^\infty$ runs through isomorphism classes of irreducible admissible representations of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A})$, where $m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi)$ is the discrete multiplicity of π (Definition B.1).

Here, we have to use [BC83, Section 4] to conclude that the continuous part of $\mathrm{L}^2(\mathrm{G}(\mathbb{Q})\backslash\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}),\chi)$ does not contribute to the L^2-cohomology in the case of Shimura varieties. By Zucker's conjecture (proved independently by Looijenga [Loo88] and Saper–Sturn [SS90]), we have a canonical isomorphism

$$\mathrm{H}^i_{(2)}(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathscr{L}_\xi)\simeq\mathrm{IH}^i(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathscr{L}_\xi) \tag{D.2}$$

[22] In this article, we only need the case where ξ is the trivial representation.

of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$-modules, where

$$\mathrm{IH}^i(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathscr{L}_\xi) \coloneqq \varinjlim_K \mathrm{IH}^i(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K \otimes_E \mathbb{C},\mathscr{L}_\xi)$$

is the direct limit over K of the complex analytic intersection cohomology of $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K \otimes_E \mathbb{C}$, where $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$ is the Baily–Borel compactification of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$ (over E).

Now let ℓ be a rational prime and choose an isomorphism $\iota_\ell\colon \mathbb{C} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$. Then the $\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$-local system $\mathscr{L}_\xi \otimes_{\mathbb{C},\iota_\ell} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$ descends to an (étale) $\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$-local system $\mathscr{L}_{\xi,\iota_\ell}$ on $\{\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K\}$. We then have a comparison isomorphism

$$\mathrm{IH}^i_{\text{ét}}(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathscr{L}_{\xi,\iota_\ell}) \simeq \mathrm{IH}^i(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathscr{L}_\xi) \otimes_{\mathbb{C},\iota_\ell} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}},$$

where

$$\mathrm{IH}^i_{\text{ét}}(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathscr{L}_{\xi,\iota_\ell}) \coloneqq \varinjlim_K \mathrm{IH}^i_{\text{ét}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K \otimes_E \mathbb{C},\mathscr{L}_{\xi,\iota_\ell}).$$

For an irreducible admissible representation π^∞ of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$, put

$$\mathrm{IH}^i_{\xi,\iota_\ell}(\pi^\infty) \coloneqq \mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}[\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)]}\left(\iota\circ\pi^\infty, \mathrm{IH}^i_{\text{ét}}(\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathscr{L}_{\xi,\iota_\ell})\right),$$

which is a finite dimensional representation of $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/E)$, whose dimension is equal to

$$\sum_{\pi_\infty} m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi_\infty\otimes\pi^\infty)\dim_{\mathbb{C}} \mathrm{H}^i(\mathfrak{g},\mathrm{K}_{\mathrm{G}};\xi_\infty\otimes\pi_\infty),$$

where π_∞ runs through all irreducible admissible representations of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbb{R})$. We suppress ξ in the notation if it is the trivial representation.

D.3. Statements for cohomology of unitary Shimura curves

We fix a CM number field E and regard E as a subfield of $\mathbb{C}$ via a fixed complex embedding $\tau_1'\colon E \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$. Let $\mathsf{c} \in \mathrm{Gal}(E/\mathbb{Q})$ be the induced complex conjugation and put $F \coloneqq E^{\mathsf{c}=1}$. Write $\Phi_F = \{\tau_1,\dots,\tau_d\}$ with $d = [F:\mathbb{Q}]$ as the set of real embeddings of F, in which τ_1 is the restriction of τ_1'.

Let V be a hermitian space over E of rank 2 of signature $(1,1)$ at τ_1 and $(2,0)$ elsewhere. As in Subsection C.1 especially Remark C.2, we have the Hodge map $\mathrm{h} \coloneqq \mathrm{h}_{\mathrm{V},\tau_1'}$, the Shimura varieties $\{\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K\}$ defined over E, and their Baily–Borel compactification $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$, all of which are smooth curves over E. By the discussion from Subsection D.2, we have an isomorphism

$$\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathbb{C}) \simeq \bigoplus_{\pi} m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi)\mathrm{H}^1(\mathfrak{g},\mathrm{K}_{\mathrm{G}};\pi_\infty)\otimes\pi^\infty$$

of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$-modules, where $\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathbb{C}) \coloneqq \varinjlim_K \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K,\mathbb{C})$. By Lemma D.2, up to equivalence, there are only two representations π_∞ of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbb{R})$ with $\mathrm{H}^1(\mathfrak{g},\mathrm{K}_{\mathrm{G}};\pi_\infty)\neq\{0\}$, namely,

$$\pi_\infty^{(1,0)} \coloneqq \pi_{1,1}^{1,0}\otimes 1\otimes\cdots\otimes 1, \qquad \pi_\infty^{(0,1)} \coloneqq \pi_{1,1}^{0,1}\otimes 1\otimes\cdots\otimes 1.$$

Definition D.3. Let π^∞ be an irreducible admissible representation of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$.

- We say that π^∞ is *stable cohomological* if both $\pi_\infty^{(1,0)}\otimes\pi^\infty$ and $\pi_\infty^{(0,1)}\otimes\pi^\infty$ have positive cuspidal multiplicity.
- We say that π^∞ is *endoscopic cohomological* if exactly one of $\pi_\infty^{(1,0)}\otimes\pi^\infty$ and $\pi_\infty^{(0,1)}\otimes\pi^\infty$ has positive cuspidal multiplicity.

Denote $\mathcal{C}_{\mathrm{V}}^{\mathrm{st}}$ (resp. $\mathcal{C}_{\mathrm{V}}^{\mathrm{end}}$) the set of isomorphism classes of stable (resp. endoscopic) cohomological irreducible admissible representations of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$. Put $\mathcal{C}_{\mathrm{V}} \coloneqq \mathcal{C}_{\mathrm{V}}^{\mathrm{st}} \coprod \mathcal{C}_{\mathrm{V}}^{\mathrm{end}}$.

Proposition D.4. *Let π^∞ be an irreducible admissible representation of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$.*

(1) If π^∞ is endoscopic cohomological, then there exists a unique adèlic oscillator triple (μ,ε,χ) (Definition 4.11) with μ of weight one and satisfying $\tau_1'\in\Phi_\mu$, such that π^∞ is isomorphic to $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$. Moreover, $\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{C}[\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)]}(\pi^\infty,\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathbb{C}))$ has dimension 1.

(2) If π^∞ is stable cohomological, then $\mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{C}[\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)]}(\pi^\infty,\mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathbb{C}))$ has dimension 2.

Proof. Let V^* be an isotropic skew-hermitian space over E of rank 2, which is unique up to isomorphism. The global inner transfer from $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})$ to $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^*)$ is known; see, for example, [Har93]. More precisely, let V_π be an irreducible $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(\mathbf{A}_F)$-submodule of $\mathrm{L}^2_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}))$ and denote $\overline{V_\pi}$ its complex conjugate space. We may choose an automorphic character $\xi\colon E^1\backslash(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty)^1\to\mathbb{C}^\times$ such that the global theta lifting $\Theta^{\mathrm{V}^*}_{\psi_F,(1,1),\mathrm{V}}(\overline{V_\pi}\otimes\xi)$ is nonzero. Then $\mathrm{JL}(V_\pi)\coloneqq \Theta^{\mathrm{V}^*}_{\psi_F,(1,1),\mathrm{V}}(\overline{V_\pi}\otimes\xi)\otimes\xi$ is a subspace of $\mathrm{L}^2_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^*))$, which is an irreducible $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^*)(\mathbf{A}_F)$-module and is independent of the choice of ξ. Denote by $\mathrm{JL}(\pi)$ the representation of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^*)(\mathbf{A}_F)$ on $\mathrm{JL}(V_\pi)$. Since the complement of $\mathrm{L}^2_{\mathrm{cusp}}$ in $\mathrm{L}^2_{\mathrm{disc}}$ consists of automorphic characters, we have $m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi)=m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\mathrm{JL}(\pi))$.

The Langlands–Arthur classification for $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^*)$ is known by [Rog90, Section 11]. Let π^* be an irreducible cuspidal automorphic representation of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}^*)(\mathbf{A}_F)$. We have the (standard) base change Π of π^*, which is an irreducible isobaric automorphic representation of $\mathrm{GL}_2(\mathbf{A}_E)$. We say that π^* is stable (resp. endoscopic) if Π is cuspidal (resp. $\Pi \simeq \Pi_1 \boxplus \Pi_2$ for two conjugate symplectic automorphic characters Π_1 and Π_2).

Suppose that π^∞ is stable cohomological. Then both $\mathrm{JL}(\pi_\infty^{(1,0)} \otimes \pi^\infty)$ and $\mathrm{JL}(\pi_\infty^{(0,1)} \otimes \pi^\infty)$ have positive multiplicity and the same base change Π. By Arthur's multiplicity formula, Π has to cuspidal, and $m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi_\infty^{(1,0)} \otimes \pi^\infty) = m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi_\infty^{(0,1)} \otimes \pi^\infty) = 1$. In particular, (2) follows.

Suppose that π^∞ is endoscopic cohomological. Then by the same reasoning, we have $\Pi \simeq \Pi_1 \boxplus \Pi_2$, and $m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi_\infty^{(1,0)} \otimes \pi^\infty) + m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi_\infty^{(0,1)} \otimes \pi^\infty) = 1$. Let π be the unique member in $\{\pi_\infty^{(1,0)} \otimes \pi^\infty, \pi_\infty^{(0,1)} \otimes \pi^\infty\}$ such that $m_{\mathrm{disc}}(\pi) = 1$. Since $\mathrm{JL}(\pi)$ is endoscopic, both Π_1 and Π_2 are conjugate symplectic automorphic characters of weight one. Thus, there exists a conjugate symplectic automorphic character μ of weight one such that $L(s, \Pi \otimes \mu)$ has a simple pole at $s = 1$. By Theorem B.4, we have a skew-hermitian space W over E of rank 1 of determinant $e \in E^{-\times} / \mathrm{N}_{E/F} E^\times$ and an automorphic character χ' of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{W})(\mathbf{A}_F)$, such that π is realized in the space of global theta lifting $\Theta^{\mathrm{V}}_{\psi_F, (\mu,\nu), \mathrm{W}}(\chi')$. Let χ be the central character of π. Then it is trivial at infinity. Thus, by Lemma D.1(4), there exist exactly two adèlic oscillator triples, which are (μ, ε, χ) and $(\mu^{\mathtt{c}}\check{\chi}, \varepsilon', \chi)$, such that π^∞ is isomorphic to the associated oscillator representation. In particular, the condition that μ is of weight one and satisfies $\tau_1' \in \Phi_\mu$ determines exactly one of the two triples. Therefore, (1) follows. □

Remark D.5. The proof of Proposition D.4(1) implies that for $\pi^\infty \simeq \omega(\mu, \varepsilon, \chi)$ that is endoscopic cohomological, we have $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi_\infty^{(1,0)} \otimes \pi^\infty) = 1$ (resp. $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi_\infty^{(0,1)} \otimes \pi^\infty) = 1$) if and only if there exists some $e \in E^{\times -}$ such that

- $\varepsilon_v = e\, \mathrm{N}_{E_v/F_v} E_v^\times$ for every nonarchimedean place v of F,
- $\tau_i'(e)$ has negative imaginary part for $i = 2, \dots, d$, where τ_i' is the unique element in Φ_μ above τ_i, and
- $\tau_1'(e)$ has negative (resp. positive) imaginary part.

Now we study the ℓ-adic cohomology of $\{\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h})_K\}_K$. Take a rational prime ℓ and an isomorphism $\iota_\ell \colon \mathbb{C} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$. Put

$$\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h}), \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}) \coloneqq \varinjlim_K \mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h})_K \otimes_E \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}).$$

By the comparison theorem, we have a canonical isomorphism

$$\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}) \simeq \mathrm{H}^1_{\mathrm{B}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathbb{C}) \otimes_{\mathbb{C},\iota_\ell} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$$

of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$-modules. For an irreducible admissible representation π^∞ of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$, the $\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$-vector space

$$\mathrm{H}^1_{\iota_\ell}(\pi^\infty) \coloneqq \mathrm{Hom}_{\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}[\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)]}\left(\iota_\ell \circ \pi^\infty, \mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}),\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})\right)$$

is a representation of $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/E)$, which we denote by $\rho_{\iota_\ell}(\pi^\infty)$.

Suppose that π^∞ is endoscopic cohomological. Then by Proposition D.4, we obtain an ℓ-adic character $\rho_{\iota_\ell}(\pi^\infty)\colon \mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/E) \to (\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})^\times$. It induces, via the isomorphism ι_ℓ, an automorphic character $\rho_\ell(\pi^\infty)\colon E^\times\backslash\mathbf{A}_E^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$. It is easy to see that the character $\rho_\ell(\pi^\infty)$ does not depend on the choice of the isomorphism ι_ℓ, which justifies its notation.

Theorem D.6. *Let π^∞ be an irreducible admissible representation of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$, and ℓ a rational prime.*

(1) Suppose that π^∞ is endoscopic cohomological, which is isomorphic to $\omega(\mu,\varepsilon,\chi)$ with μ of weight one and satisfying $\tau_1' \in \Phi_\mu$ as in Theorem D.4(1). Then

$$\rho_\ell(\pi^\infty) = \begin{cases} \mu\cdot|\,|_E^{-1/2} & \text{if } m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi_\infty^{(1,0)}\otimes\pi^\infty)=1,\\ \mu^{\mathsf{c}}\check{\chi}\cdot|\,|_E^{-1/2} & \text{if } m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi_\infty^{(0,1)}\otimes\pi^\infty)=1.\end{cases}$$

(2) Suppose that π^∞ is stable cohomological. Then for every $\iota_\ell\colon \mathbb{C}\xrightarrow{\sim}\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$, we have

(a) $\rho_{\iota_\ell}(\pi^\infty)$ is an irreducible two-dimensional representation of $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/E)$;

(b) $\rho_{\iota_\ell}(\pi^\infty)^\vee \simeq \rho_{\iota_\ell}(\pi^\infty)^{\mathsf{c}}(1)$;

(c) if we let Π^∞ be the irreducible admissible representation of $\mathrm{GL}_2(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty)$ that is the standard base change of π^∞, then for every nonarchimedean place w of E coprime to ℓ,

$$\mathrm{WD}(\rho_{\iota_\ell}(\pi^\infty)\mid\mathrm{Gal}(E_w^{\mathrm{ac}}/E_w))^{\text{F-ss}} \simeq \iota_\ell\circ\mathscr{L}_{2,E_w}(\Pi_w^\infty|\det|_w^{-1/2})$$

holds, where $\mathscr{L}_{2,E_w}$ denotes the local Langlands correspondence for GL_{2,E_w}.

The proof of the theorem will be given in Subsection D.4.

The theorem reveals some information about the Albanese variety (Jacobian) A_K of $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$. We have a homomorphism $\mathscr{C}_c^\infty(K\backslash\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)/K,\mathbb{Q}) \to \mathrm{End}(A_K)_\mathbb{Q}$ of $\mathbb{Q}$-algebras induced by the Hecke actions. Note that $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q})$ acts on $\mathcal{C}_\mathrm{V}$ through the coefficients, which preserves the two subsets $\mathcal{C}_\mathrm{V}^\mathrm{st}$ and $\mathcal{C}_\mathrm{V}^\mathrm{end}$. Therefore, we obtain an isogeny decomposition

$$A_K \sim A_K^\mathrm{st} \times A_K^\mathrm{end} \tag{D.3}$$

(over E) such that under the canonical isomorphism in Lemma 2.4(1), we have isomorphisms

$$\mathrm{H}^1_\mathrm{B}(A_K^\mathrm{st},\mathbb{C}) \simeq \bigoplus_{\pi^\infty\in\mathcal{C}_\mathrm{V}^\mathrm{st}} \mathrm{H}^1_\mathrm{B}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K,\mathbb{C})[(\pi^\infty)^K],$$
$$\mathrm{H}^1_\mathrm{B}(A_K^\mathrm{end},\mathbb{C}) \simeq \bigoplus_{\pi^\infty\in\mathcal{C}_\mathrm{V}^\mathrm{end}} \mathrm{H}^1_\mathrm{B}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K,\mathbb{C})[(\pi^\infty)^K]$$

of $\mathscr{C}_c^\infty(K\backslash\mathbf{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)/K,\mathbb{Q})$-modules.

Put $\underline{\mathcal{C}}_\mathrm{V}^\mathrm{st} \coloneqq \mathcal{C}_\mathrm{V}^\mathrm{st}/\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q})$, the set of $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q})$-orbits in $\mathcal{C}_\mathrm{V}^\mathrm{st}$. For every orbit $\underline{\pi}^\infty$, denote by $M(\underline{\pi}^\infty) \subseteq \mathbb{C}$ its field of definition, namely, the fixed field of the stabilizer of $\underline{\pi}^\infty$ in $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q})$; it is a number field, either totally real or CM. By Theorem D.6(2) and a standard argument, we may associate to $\underline{\pi}^\infty$ a (simple) abelian variety $A(\underline{\pi}^\infty)$ over E, which satisfies

- $\dim A(\underline{\pi}^\infty) = [M(\underline{\pi}^\infty):\mathbb{Q}]$,
- $\mathrm{End}_E(A(\underline{\pi}^\infty))_\mathbb{Q} \simeq M(\underline{\pi}^\infty)$, and
- $A(\underline{\pi}^\infty)\otimes_{E,\mathtt{c}} E$ is isogenous to $A(\underline{\pi}^\infty)^\vee$.

In fact, $A(\underline{\pi}^\infty)$ is of strict GL(2)-type in the terminology of [YZZ13, Section 3.2.1]. Finally, note that for every open compact subgroup K of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$, the dimension of K-fixed vectors in a representations in $\underline{\pi}^\infty$ depends only on the orbit, which we denote by $\dim_\mathbb{C}(\underline{\pi}^\infty)^K$. Theorem D.6(2) has the following corollary.

Corollary D.7. *For every sufficiently small open compact subgroup K of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$, we have an isogeny decomposition*

$$A_K^\mathrm{st} \sim \prod_{\underline{\pi}^\infty\in\underline{\mathcal{C}}_\mathrm{V}^\mathrm{st}} A(\underline{\pi}^\infty)^{\dim_\mathbb{C}(\underline{\pi}^\infty)^K}$$

compatible with changing K in the obvious way. In particular, A_K^st does not have factors that are of CM type. Moreover, $A(\underline{\pi}_1^\infty)$ is isogenous to $A(\underline{\pi}_2^\infty)$

for $\underline{\pi}_1^\infty, \underline{\pi}_2^\infty \in \underline{\mathcal{C}}_{\mathrm{V}}^{\mathrm{st}}$ *if and only if there exist* $\pi_1^\infty \in \underline{\pi}_1^\infty$ *and* $\pi_2^\infty \in \underline{\pi}_2^\infty$ *that have the same standard base change to* $\mathrm{GL}_2(\mathbf{A}_E^\infty)$.

The isogeny decomposition of A_K^{end} is a special case of Corollary 4.20.

D.4. Proof of Theorem D.6

We prove Theorem D.6 by first establishing a congruence relation for the Shimura curve $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$ over a set of primes of E of density 1.

To state the congruence relation, we fix a prime $\mathfrak{q}$ of E, with the underlying rational prime p, such that

- $\mathrm{G} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{Q}_p$ is unramified (in particular, p is unramified in E), and
- $\mathfrak{q} \neq \mathfrak{q}^{\mathtt{c}}$, that is, $\mathfrak{q}$ has degree 1 over F.

Denote by $\mathfrak{p}$ the prime of F underlying $\mathfrak{q}$. We identify $F_{\mathfrak{p}}$ with $E_{\mathfrak{q}}$. Choose a uniformizer ϖ of $F_{\mathfrak{p}}$. Put $\mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}} := O_{F_{\mathfrak{p}}}$, $\kappa := \mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}/\varpi\mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}$, and $q := \#\kappa$. Fix a maximal unramified extension $F_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}$ of $F_{\mathfrak{p}}$ with $\mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}$ the ring of integers and $\kappa^{\mathrm{ac}} := \mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}/\varpi\mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}$ the residue field. Let $\sigma\colon \mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}} \to \mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}$ be the q-th Frobenius map.

Fix a basis of the $E_{\mathfrak{q}}$-vector space $\mathrm{V} \otimes_E E_{\mathfrak{q}}$ under which we identify $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V} \otimes_F F_{\mathfrak{p}})$ with $\mathrm{GL}_{2,F_{\mathfrak{p}}}$. Let $\mathrm{Iw}_{\mathfrak{p}} := \left(\begin{smallmatrix} \mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}} & \mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}} \\ \varpi\mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}} & \mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}} \end{smallmatrix}\right) \subseteq \mathrm{GL}_2(\mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}})$ be an Iwahori subgroup. We consider open compact subgroups $K \subseteq \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$ of the form $\mathrm{GL}_2(\mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}) \times K_p^{\mathfrak{p}} \times K^p$ where $\mathrm{GL}_2(\mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}) \times K_p^{\mathfrak{p}}$ is a hyperspecial maximal subgroup of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ and K^p is a sufficiently small open compact subgroup of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^{\infty,p})$. For such K, we put $K_{\mathrm{Iw}} := \mathrm{Iw}_{\mathfrak{p}} \times K_p^{\mathfrak{p}} \times K^p$. We have the projection morphism $\pi\colon \overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \to \overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$, and an isomorphism

$$\mathrm{t}_\varpi\colon \overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \xrightarrow{\sim} \overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$$

induced by the Hecke translation of the element $\left(\begin{smallmatrix} & \varpi \\ 1 & \end{smallmatrix}\right)$. In view of the reciprocity map in Remark C.2, the morphism

$$\mathrm{t}_\varpi \otimes \sigma\colon \overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \otimes_{F_{\mathfrak{p}}} F_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}} \to \overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \otimes_{F_{\mathfrak{p}}} F_{\mathfrak{p}}^{\mathrm{nr}}$$

preserves every connected component.

We will show in Proposition D.8 that $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$ (resp. $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$) admits a smooth model (resp. a stable model) $\mathcal{S}_K$ (resp. $\mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$) over $\mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}$. By [LL99, Proposition 4.4(a)], the morphism t_ϖ extends (uniquely) to a morphism $\mathrm{t}_\varpi\colon \mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \to \mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$, which has to be an isomorphism; and π extends (uniquely) to a morphism $\pi\colon \mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \to \mathcal{S}_K$. Finally, to ease notation, we put $\mathcal{T}_K := \mathcal{S}_K \otimes_{\mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}} \kappa$ and $\mathcal{T}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} := \mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \otimes_{\mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}} \kappa$ for the special fibers.

Proposition D.8. *Let the notation be as above. We have*

(1) The smooth projective $F_{\mathfrak{p}}$-curve $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$ admits a smooth model $\mathcal{S}_K$ over $\mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}$.
(2) The smooth projective $F_{\mathfrak{p}}$-curve $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ admits a stable model $\mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ over $\mathscr{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}$.
(3) The κ-scheme $\mathcal{T}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ has two irreducible components $\mathcal{T}^+_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ and $\mathcal{T}^-_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$, satisfying that
   (a) $\pi^+ := \pi \mid \mathcal{T}^+_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} : \mathcal{T}^+_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \to \mathcal{T}_K$ is an isomorphism;
   (b) $\pi^- := \pi \mid \mathcal{T}^-_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} : \mathcal{T}^-_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \to \mathcal{T}_K$ is a finite flat morphism of degree q;
   (c) $\mathrm{t}_\varpi \otimes \sigma$ induces an isomorphism between $\mathcal{T}^+_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \otimes_\kappa \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}}$ and $\mathcal{T}^-_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \otimes_\kappa \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}}$;
   (d) the morphism $(\pi^- \otimes \mathrm{id}) \circ (\mathrm{t}_\varpi \otimes \sigma) \circ (\pi^+ \otimes \mathrm{id})^{-1}$ coincides with the absolute q-th Frobenius morphism of $\mathcal{T}_K \otimes_\kappa \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}}$.

Proof. We first assume $F \neq \mathbb{Q}$. Then we have $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K = \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$. We will reduce the proposition to (a weak form of) the congruence relation in [Car86, Proposition 10.3] by changing the Shimura datum.[23] Choose a quaternion algebra over B together with an embedding $E \hookrightarrow B$ of F-algebras, such that the induced hermitian form on B is isomorphic to V. In particular, B is indefinite at τ and definite at all other places of F; B is division at a nonarchimedean place v of F if and only if V_v is anisotropic. We identify V with B as hermitian spaces. Let $(B^\times \times E^\times)^1$ be the subgroup of $B^\times \times E^\times$ consisting of elements (b,e) such that $\mathrm{N}_{B/F}\, b \cdot \mathrm{N}_{E/F}\, e = 1$, viewing as a reductive group over F. Then we have a short exact sequence

$$1 \to \mathbb{G}_{\mathrm{m},F} \to (B^\times \times E^\times)^1 \to \mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V}) \to 1,$$

where the homomorphism $\mathbb{G}_{\mathrm{m},F} \to (B^\times \times E^\times)^1$ is given by $e \mapsto (e, e^{-1})$. The fixed basis of $\mathrm{V} \otimes_E E_{\mathfrak{q}}$ identifies $B \otimes_F F_{\mathfrak{p}}$ with $\mathrm{Mat}_2(F_{\mathfrak{p}})$, and further $(B \otimes_F F_{\mathfrak{p}})^\times$ with $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{V})(F_{\mathfrak{p}})$.

[23] In [Car86], the initial Shimura variety is a quaternionic Shimura curve, and the auxiliary Shimura variety is a (quaternionic) unitary Shimura curve of PEL type. However, in our case, the initial Shimura variety is a unitary Shimura curve of non-PEL type, and the auxiliary Shimura variety we introduce below is a quaternionic Shimura curve, which is the initial Shimura variety of Carayol. So strictly speaking, to obtain this proposition, we have to change Shimura data twice but the second step has already been carried out by Carayol. Such consideration was also used in [Liu11b].

Put $\mathrm{G}' := \mathrm{Res}_{F/\mathbb{Q}} B^\times$ and let h' be the Hodge map that is *inverse* to the one given in [Car86, 0.1].[24] We have the Shimura curve $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}')_{K'}$ defined over F. Here, the open compact subgroup $K' \subseteq \mathrm{G}'(\mathbf{A}_\infty)$ is of the form $K'_p \times K'^p$, where K'_p is hyperspecial maximal of the form $\mathrm{GL}_2(\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}) \times K'^{\mathfrak{p}}_p$. Replacing $\mathrm{GL}_2(\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p})$ by $\mathrm{Iw}_\mathfrak{p}$, we obtain K'_{Iw}, hence the Shimura curve $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}')_{K'_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$. Applying the constructions for the Shimura data (G,h) to $(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}')$, we obtain $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}')_{K'}$, $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}')_{K'_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$, π', and t'_ϖ. By Deligne's theory of connected Shimura varieties [Del79] (or see [Car86, Section 4]), for every connected component $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})^\dagger_K$ of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K \otimes_{F_\mathfrak{p}} F^{\mathrm{nr}}_\mathfrak{p}$, there exists some K'^p and a connected component $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}')^\dagger_{K'}$ of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}')_{K'} \otimes_{F_\mathfrak{p}} F^{\mathrm{nr}}_\mathfrak{p}$ such that there is a commutative diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})^\dagger_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} & \xrightarrow{\simeq} & \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}')^\dagger_{K'_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \\ \downarrow{\scriptstyle \pi} & & \downarrow{\scriptstyle \pi'} \\ \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})^\dagger_{K} & \xrightarrow{\simeq} & \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}')^\dagger_{K'} \end{array}$$

where $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})^\dagger_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} := \pi^{-1}\,\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})^\dagger_K$ and $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}')^\dagger_{K'_{\mathrm{Iw}}} := \pi'^{-1}\,\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}')^\dagger_{K'}$, under which the automorphism $\mathrm{t}_\varpi \otimes \sigma$ of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})^\dagger_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ coincide with the automorphism $\mathrm{t}'_\varpi \otimes \sigma$ of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}')^\dagger_{K'_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ respectively. Therefore, the proposition will follow from the version for $(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}')$.[25]

To release ourselves from the clumsy notation, we will now suppress the "prime" in all superscripts; in particular, the group G now is $\mathrm{Res}_{F/\mathbb{Q}} B^\times$. Then (1) follows from [Car86, Proposition 6.1]. For the remaining claims, we need some preparation.

For $n \geqslant 1$, put $K_n := (\mathrm{I}_2 + \varpi^n \mathrm{GL}_2(\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p})) \times K^\mathfrak{p}_p \times K^p$. In [Car86, 1.4.4], Carayol constructed an $\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}$-divisible group E_∞ over $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$, such that the pullback of $\mathrm{E}_\infty[\mathfrak{p}^n]$ to $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_n}$ is trivial. By the construction, the subgroup $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_1} \times \left(\begin{smallmatrix} * \\ 0 \end{smallmatrix}\right) \subseteq \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_1} \times (\mathfrak{p}^{-1}/\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p})^2$ is stable under the action (given in [Car86, 1.4.2]) of $\mathrm{Iw}_\mathfrak{p}$. In particular, it defines an $\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}$-stable subgroup C_{Iw} of $\mathrm{E}_\infty[\mathfrak{p}]$ over $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ of rank q. By [Car86, Proposition 6.4],

[24] This is to ensure that the actions of σ on the connected components of $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h}) \otimes_E \mathbb{C}$ and $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G}',\mathrm{h}') \otimes_F \mathbb{C}$ are compatible with the composite homomorphism $F^\times_\mathfrak{p} \simeq E^\times_\mathfrak{q} \xrightarrow{e \mapsto (e, e^{-1})} E^1_\mathfrak{p}$.

[25] Here, we have to use the fact that constructing smooth (resp. stable) models of smooth projective curves over $\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}$ is equivalent to constructing them after the base change to $\mathscr{O}^{\mathrm{nr}}_\mathfrak{p}$; see, for example, [DM69, Section 1].

the $\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}$-divisible group E_∞ extends uniquely to an $\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}$-divisible group $\mathcal{E}_\infty$ over $\mathcal{S}_K$ such that $\mathcal{E}_\infty \mid \mathcal{T}_K$ is of dimension 1 and $\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}$-height 2.

We define a functor $\mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ over $\mathcal{S}_K$ such that for every $\mathcal{S}_K$-scheme $u\colon S \to \mathcal{S}_K$, the set $\mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}(S)$ consists of $\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}$-stable finite flat S-subgroups of $u^*\mathcal{E}_\infty[\mathfrak{p}]$ of rank q. As pointed out in [Car86, Section 6.7], the supersingular locus of $\mathcal{E}_\infty$ is discrete. Thus, it follows from [Car86, Proposition 6.6] and the Grothendieck–Messing theory that the above functor is represented by a finite flat morphism $\pi\colon \mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \to \mathcal{S}_K$ of schemes (of degree $q+1$), satisfying that $\mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ is a semi-stable curve over $\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}$. Moreover, since the special fiber $\mathcal{T}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \coloneqq \mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \otimes_{\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}} \kappa$ does not contain genus zero curves as irreducible components, $\mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ is a stable curve over $\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}$. The subgroup C_{Iw} constructed above induces a morphism $\iota\colon \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \to \mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \otimes_{\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}} F_\mathfrak{p}$ of schemes over $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$. By the construction of E_∞, it is easy to see that the morphism $\pi\colon \mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \otimes_{\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}} F_\mathfrak{p} \to \mathcal{S}_K \otimes_{\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}} F_\mathfrak{p} = \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$ is étale and generically irreducible. Thus, ι is an isomorphism since both sides are finite étale of degree $q+1$ and generically irreducible over $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$. Thus, (2) follows, and we will identify $\mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \otimes_{\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}} F_\mathfrak{p}$ with $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ via ι.

Let $(\pi^*\mathcal{E}_\infty, \mathcal{C}_{\mathrm{Iw}})$ be the universal object over $\mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$. Denote by $\mathcal{T}^+_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ (resp. $\mathcal{T}^-_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$) the Zariski closure of the locus in $\mathcal{T}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ where $\mathcal{C}_{\mathrm{Iw}}$ is continuous (resp. étale). Then $\mathcal{T}^\pm_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ are union of irreducible components and they cover $\mathcal{T}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$. To prove (3), we have to consider full Drinfeld level structures at $\mathfrak{p}$. For $n \geqslant 1$, let $\mathcal{S}_{K_n}$ be the functor over $\mathcal{S}_K$ such that for every $\mathcal{S}_K$-scheme $u\colon S \to \mathcal{S}_K$, the set $\mathcal{S}_{K_n}(S)$ consists of Drinfeld level structures $\varphi\colon (\mathfrak{p}^{-n}/\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p})^2 \to \mathrm{Mor}_S(S, u^*\mathcal{E}_\infty[\mathfrak{p}^n])$ (see [Car86, Section 7.2] for more details). By [Car86, Proposition 7.4], it is represented by a finite flat morphism $\pi_n\colon \mathcal{S}_{K_n} \to \mathcal{S}_K$ of schemes (of degree $\#\,\mathrm{GL}_2(\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}/\mathfrak{p}^n)$), such that $\pi_n \otimes_{\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}} F_\mathfrak{p}$ is canonically isomorphic to the projection $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_n} \to \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$. Now we take $n=1$, we define a morphism $\pi_{\mathrm{Iw}}\colon \mathcal{S}_{K_1} \to \mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ by sending a Drinfeld level structure φ to the subgroup $\sum_{\alpha\in A^+}[\varphi(\alpha)]$ where $A^+ \subseteq (\mathfrak{p}^{-1}/\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p})^2$ is the line with the second coordinate zero. Then $\pi_{\mathrm{Iw}} \otimes_{\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}} F_\mathfrak{p}$ is canonically isomorphic to the projection $\mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_1} \to \mathrm{Sh}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$. Let $\mathcal{T}^{\mathrm{red}}_{K_1}$ be the induced reduced subscheme of $\mathcal{S}_{K_1} \otimes_{\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p}} \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}}$. Then by [Car86, 9.4.1], the morphism $\mathcal{T}^{\mathrm{red}}_{K_1} \to \mathcal{T}_K \otimes_\kappa \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}}$ is finite flat of degree $(q-1)q(q+1)$. For every line A in $(\mathfrak{p}^{-1}/\mathscr{O}_\mathfrak{p})^2$, let $\mathcal{T}^{\mathrm{red}}_{K_1,A}$ be the locus where $\varphi \mid A = 0$. Then by [Car86, Proposition 9.4.4], $\{\mathcal{T}^{\mathrm{red}}_{K_1,A}\}_A$ is the set of all irreducible components of $\mathcal{T}^{\mathrm{red}}_{K_1}$. Since $\mathrm{GL}_2(\kappa)$ acts transitively on $\{\mathcal{T}^{\mathrm{red}}_{K_1,A}\}_A$, each $\mathcal{T}^{\mathrm{red}}_{K_1,A}$ is of degree $q(q-1)$ over $\mathcal{T}_K \otimes_\kappa \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}}$. By definition, the image of $\mathcal{T}^{\mathrm{red}}_{K_1,A}$ under π_{Iw} is contained in $\mathcal{T}^+_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ (resp. $\mathcal{T}^-_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$) if and only if $A = A^+$ (resp. $A \neq A^+$). If $A \neq A^+$, then $\pi_{\mathrm{Iw}}\colon \mathcal{T}^{\mathrm{red}}_{K_1,A} \to \mathcal{T}^-_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \otimes_\kappa \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}}$ is étale of degree $q-1$ since to recover the Drinfeld level structure is equivalent to choosing a basis of A^+. Thus, $\deg(\pi \mid \mathcal{T}^-_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}) \geqslant q$. Since $\deg(\pi \mid \mathcal{T}^+_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}) \geqslant 1$, we must have $\deg(\pi \mid \mathcal{T}^-_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}) = q$ and $\deg(\pi \mid \mathcal{T}^+_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}) = 1$, and both $\mathcal{T}^-_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ and $\mathcal{T}^+_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$ are irreducible. Thus, (3a) has been verified as a finite flat morphism of degree 1 must be an isomorphism, and (3b) also follows. For (3c,3d), put $\mathcal{S}_{K_\infty} := \varprojlim_n \mathcal{S}_{K_n}$. Let A^+_∞ (resp. A^-_∞) be the subspace of $F^2_{\mathfrak{p}}$ with the second (resp. first) coordinate zero. In view of the notation of [Car86, Section 10.3],[26] we have subschemes $(\mathcal{S}_{K_\infty}\overline{\otimes}\kappa^{\mathrm{ac}})_{A^\pm_\infty}$ of $\mathcal{S}_{K_\infty}\overline{\otimes}\kappa^{\mathrm{ac}}$, which map surjectively to $\mathcal{T}^\pm_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \otimes_\kappa \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}}$ under the composite map $\mathcal{S}_{K_\infty} \to \mathcal{S}_{K_1} \xrightarrow{\pi_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \mathcal{S}_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$, respectively. Note that the endomorphism t_ϖ lifts to $\mathcal{S}_{K_\infty}$ by the Hecke translation. By [Car86, Proposition 10.3], the morphism $\mathrm{t}_\varpi\otimes\sigma$ and the Hecke translation by $\left(\begin{smallmatrix} & 1 \\ 1 & \end{smallmatrix}\right)$ induce the same map on the underlying set of $(\mathcal{S}_{K_\infty}\overline{\otimes}\kappa^{\mathrm{ac}})_{A^+_\infty}$.[27] Since the Hecke translation by $\left(\begin{smallmatrix} & 1 \\ 1 & \end{smallmatrix}\right)$ maps $(\mathcal{S}_{K_\infty}\overline{\otimes}\kappa^{\mathrm{ac}})_{A^+_\infty}$ to $(\mathcal{S}_{K_\infty}\overline{\otimes}\kappa^{\mathrm{ac}})_{A^-_\infty}$, we obtain (3c). For (3d), since $\left(\begin{smallmatrix} & 1 \\ 1 & \end{smallmatrix}\right)$ acts trivially on $\mathcal{T}_K$, we know, again by [Car86, Proposition 10.3], that $(\pi_\infty\otimes\mathrm{id})\circ(\mathrm{t}_\varpi\otimes\sigma)$ coincides with $\pi_\infty\otimes\mathrm{id}$ on the underlying set of $(\mathcal{S}_{K_\infty}\overline{\otimes}\kappa^{\mathrm{ac}})_{A^+_\infty}$ where $\pi_\infty\colon \mathcal{S}_{K_\infty} \to \mathcal{S}_K$ is the obvious projection. This implies that $\mathbf{t} := (\pi^-\otimes\mathrm{id})\circ(\mathrm{t}_\varpi\otimes\sigma)\circ(\pi^+\otimes\mathrm{id})^{-1}$ induces the identity map on the underlying set of $\mathcal{T}_K \otimes_\kappa \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}}$, which has to be purely inseparable. We factors $\mathbf{t}$ as the composite map

$$\mathcal{T}_K \otimes_\kappa \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}} \xrightarrow{\mathbf{t}'} (\mathcal{T}_K \otimes_\kappa \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}})^{(q)} \xrightarrow{\mathrm{id}\otimes\sigma} \mathcal{T}_K \otimes_\kappa \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}}.$$

Now $\mathbf{t}'$ is κ^{ac}-linear, purely inseparable, inducing the identity map on the underlying set, and of degree q by (3b,3c), so it has to be the relative q-th Frobenius morphism by [SP, 0CCZ]. Thus, $\mathbf{t}$ is the absolute q-th Frobenius morphism. The proposition is finally proved in the case where $F \neq \mathbb{Q}$.

When $F = \mathbb{Q}$, we can still deduce the proposition to the one for $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}', \mathrm{h}')_{K'}$, which is either: (i) a Shimura curve associated to a division rational quaternion algebra, or (ii) a compactified modular curve. In both cases, $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}', \mathrm{h}')_K$ is already a moduli space. In case (i), the conclusions of the proposition can be found in [Buz97]. In case (ii), the proposition is well-known (see [DR73, KM85]). ☐

Corollary D.9. *For every rational prime $\ell \neq p$, the action $(\sigma^{-1})^*$ of the* geometric *Frobenius at $\mathfrak{q}$ on $\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h})_K \otimes_E \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})$ satisfies the equation*

$$X^2 - \mathrm{t}^*_\varpi X + q\langle\varpi\rangle^* = 0,$$

[26] Our $\mathcal{S}_{K_\infty}$ is Carayol's $\boldsymbol{M}$.

[27] Here, our σ is the (arithmetic) Frobenius, which is inverse to the one that should appear in [Car86, Proposition 10.3]. Such difference is due to the fact that our choice of the Hodge map for $\mathrm{Res}_{F/\mathbb{Q}} B^\times$ is inverse to Carayol's.

where $\langle\varpi\rangle\colon \overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K \to \overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$ *is the Hecke translation given by* $\left(\begin{smallmatrix}\varpi & \\ & \varpi\end{smallmatrix}\right)$. *Here, we regard* t_ϖ *as a correspondence on* $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K$.

Proof. It suffices to show that $\mathrm{t}_\varpi^* = (\sigma^{-1})^* + q\langle\varpi\rangle^* \circ \sigma^*$ for the actions on $\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K \otimes_E \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})$. By comparison, it suffices to prove this identity on $\mathcal{T}_K$. However, by Proposition D.8(3), the correspondence t_ϖ on $\mathcal{T}_K$ decomposes as the sum of

$$\mathcal{T}_K \xleftarrow{\pi^+} \mathcal{T}^+_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \xrightarrow{\mathrm{t}^+_\varpi} \mathcal{T}^-_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \xrightarrow{\pi^-} \mathcal{T}_K, \quad \mathcal{T}_K \xleftarrow{\pi^-} \mathcal{T}^-_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \xrightarrow{\mathrm{t}^-_\varpi} \mathcal{T}^+_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}} \xrightarrow{\pi^+} \mathcal{T}_K,$$

where $\mathrm{t}^\pm_\varpi$ is the restriction of t_ϖ to $\mathcal{T}^\pm_{K_{\mathrm{Iw}}}$, respectively. By Proposition D.8(3d), the action of $(\pi^- \circ \mathrm{t}^+_\varpi \circ (\pi^+)^{-1})^*$ coincides with the action of $(\sigma^{-1})^*$ on $\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K \otimes_E \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})$; and the action of $(\pi^- \circ \mathrm{t}^+_\varpi \circ (\pi^+)^{-1})_*$ coincides with the action of $q(\sigma^{-1})_* = q\sigma^*$ on $\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G},\mathrm{h})_K \otimes_E \mathbb{C}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})$.

For the first part, we have on $\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(\mathcal{T}_K \otimes_\kappa \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})$ that

$$\begin{aligned}
&\pi^+_* \circ (\mathrm{t}^+_\varpi)^* \circ (\pi^-)^* \\
&\quad = \pi^+_* \circ (\pi^+)^* \circ ((\pi^+)^{-1})^* \circ (\mathrm{t}^+_\varpi)^* \circ (\pi^-)^* \\
&\quad = (\pi^+_* \circ (\pi^+)^*) \circ (\pi^- \circ \mathrm{t}^+_\varpi \circ (\pi^+)^{-1})^* = (\pi^+_* \circ (\pi^+)^*) \circ (\sigma^{-1})^* = (\sigma^{-1})^*
\end{aligned}$$

as π^+ is an isomorphism by Proposition D.8(3a).

For the second part, we have on $\mathrm{H}^1_{\text{ét}}(\mathcal{T}_K \otimes_\kappa \kappa^{\mathrm{ac}}, \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})$ that

$$\begin{aligned}
&\pi^-_* \circ (\mathrm{t}^-_\varpi)^* \circ (\pi^+)^* \\
&\quad = \pi^-_* \circ ((\mathrm{t}^+_\varpi)^{-1})^* \circ \langle\varpi\rangle^* \circ (\pi^+)^* = \pi^-_* \circ (\mathrm{t}^+_\varpi)_* \circ \langle\varpi\rangle^* \circ ((\pi^+)^{-1})_* \\
&\quad = \pi^-_* \circ (\mathrm{t}^+_\varpi)_* \circ ((\pi^+)^{-1})_* \circ \langle\varpi\rangle^* = (\pi^- \circ \mathrm{t}^+_\varpi \circ (\pi^+)^{-1})_* \circ \langle\varpi\rangle^* \\
&\quad = q\sigma^* \circ \langle\varpi\rangle^* = q\langle\varpi\rangle^* \circ \sigma^*.
\end{aligned}$$

Adding the two parts, we obtain the desired identity. □

Proof of Theorem D.6. Let π^∞ be an irreducible admissible representation of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$. Denote by $\Sigma(\pi^\infty)$ the set of primes $\mathfrak{q}$ of E such that $\mathfrak{q}$ has degree 1 over F and π^∞_p is an unramified representation of $\mathrm{G}(\mathbb{Q}_p)$, where p is the underlying rational prime of $\mathfrak{q}$. It is clear that $\Sigma(\pi^\infty)$ Chebotarev density 1 among all primes of E.

We consider (2) first. Let ℓ be a rational prime and let $\iota_\ell\colon \mathbb{C} \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}}$ be an isomorphism. Let Π be the standard base change of either $\pi_\infty^{(1,0)} \otimes \pi^\infty$ or $\pi_\infty^{(0,1)} \otimes \pi^\infty$. Then Π is cuspidal. In [BR93, Section 4], the authors constructed an irreducible Galois representation $\rho_{\Pi,\iota_\ell}\colon \mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/E) \to \mathrm{GL}_2(\mathbb{Q}_\ell^{\mathrm{ac}})$ that satisfies (2c) at all but finitely many nonarchimedean places w of E coprime to ℓ. On the other hand, Corollary D.9 already implies (2c) for $\rho_{\iota_\ell}(\pi^\infty)$ at places $w = \mathfrak{q} \in \Sigma(\pi^\infty)$ that is coprime to ℓ. By the Chebotarev density theorem, $\rho_{\iota_\ell}(\pi^\infty)$ and ρ_{Π,ι_ℓ} are isomorphic, which implies (2a). Moreover, (2b) also follows from the Chebotarev density theorem; and (2c) follows from [Car12, Theorem 1.1].

Now we consider (1). Put $\tilde{\mu} \coloneqq \rho_\ell(\pi^\infty)\colon E^\times\backslash \mathbf{A}_E^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ for simplicity. We also put $\mu_1 \coloneqq \mu|\ |_E^{-1/2}$ and $\mu_2 \coloneqq \mu^{\mathtt{c}}\check{\chi}|\ |_E^{-1/2}$. Then Corollary D.9 implies that for every $\mathfrak{q} \in \Sigma(\pi^\infty)$ that is coprime to ℓ, we have $\tilde{\mu}_\mathfrak{q} \in \{\mu_{1\mathfrak{q}}, \mu_{2\mathfrak{q}}\}$. We claim that $\tilde{\mu} \in \{\mu_1, \mu_2\}$. For $i = 1, 2$, let Σ_i be the set of primes v of E such that $\tilde{\mu}_v = \mu_{iv}$, and let δ_i be the upper density of Σ_i. Then we have $\delta_1 + \delta_2 \geqslant 1$. Without lost of generality, we assume that $\delta_1 > 0$. Then by [Raj00, Theorem 1], there exists a Dirichlet character η_1 of E such that $\tilde{\mu} = \mu_1\eta_1$. If $\eta_1 = 1$, then we are done. Otherwise, $\delta_1 < 1$, and then $\delta_2 > 0$. By the same argument, we have another Dirichlet character η_2 of E such that $\tilde{\mu} = \mu_2\eta_2$. Thus, $\mu_1\mu_2^{-1}$ is a Dirichlet character, which is not true. Therefore, we must have $\tilde{\mu} \in \{\mu_1, \mu_2\}$. We are left to determine which one $\tilde{\mu}$ is.

Fix an open compact subgroup $K \subseteq \mathrm{G}(\mathbf{A}^\infty)$ such that $(\pi^K)^\infty \neq \{0\}$. Let A_K be the Jacobian of $\overline{\mathrm{Sh}}(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{h})_K$. Let $\underline{\pi}^\infty$ be the $\mathrm{Gal}(\mathbb{C}/\mathbb{Q})$-orbit of π^∞. Using Hecke operators, we may find a surjective homomorphism $\varphi\colon A_K \to B$ of abelian varieties over E such that the induced map $\phi^*\colon \mathrm{H}^1_\mathrm{B}(B, \mathbb{Q}) \to \mathrm{H}^1_\mathrm{B}(A_K, \mathbb{Q})[\underline{\pi}^\infty]$ is an isomorphism. Let B_0 be some simple factor of B over E. Then B_0 has complex multiplications by some subfield $M_0 \subseteq \mathbb{C}$, which has to contain M'_μ (Definition 4.3). There are two cases.

If $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi_\infty^{(1,0)} \otimes \pi^\infty) = 1$, then $\mathrm{H}^1_\mathrm{B}(X, \mathbb{C})[\pi^\infty]$ has Hodge type $(1, 0)$. Thus, $\tilde{\mu}$ is the associated CM character of B_0. In particular, we have $\tilde{\mu}_{\tau_1}(z) = 1/z$, where we have identified $\mathbb{C}$ with $E \otimes_{\tau_1} \mathbb{R}$ through the embedding τ'_1, which implies that $\tilde{\mu} = \mu|\ |_E^{-1/2}$.

If $m_{\mathrm{cusp}}(\pi_\infty^{(0,1)} \otimes \pi^\infty) = 1$, then $\mathrm{H}^1_\mathrm{B}(X, \mathbb{C})[\pi^\infty]$ has Hodge type $(0, 1)$. Thus, $\tilde{\mu}^{\mathtt{c}}$ is the associated CM character of B_0. In particular, we have $\tilde{\mu}_{\tau_1}(z) = 1/\overline{z}$, which implies that $\tilde{\mu} = \mu^{\mathtt{c}}\check{\chi}|\ |_E^{-1/2}$.

Theorem D.6 is all proved. □

References

[Art13] J. Arthur, *The endoscopic classification of representations*, American Mathematical Society Colloquium Publications, vol. 61, American Mathematical Society, Providence, RI, 2013. Orthogonal and symplectic groups. MR3135650

[AMRT10] A. Ash, D. Mumford, M. Rapoport, and Y.-S. Tai, *Smooth compactifications of locally symmetric varieties*, 2nd ed., Cambridge Mathematical Library, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2010. With the collaboration of Peter Scholze. MR2590897

[Beĭ87] A. Beĭlinson, *Height pairing between algebraic cycles*, Current trends in arithmetical algebraic geometry (Arcata, Calif., 1985), Contemp. Math., vol. 67, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI, 1987, pp. 1–24. MR902590 (89g:11052)

[BMM16] N. Bergeron, J. Millson, and C. Mœglin, *The Hodge conjecture and arithmetic quotients of complex balls*, Acta Math. **216** (2016), no. 1, 1–125. MR3508219

[BR93] D. Blasius and J. D. Rogawski, *Motives for Hilbert modular forms*, Invent. Math. **114** (1993), no. 1, 55–87. MR1235020

[Blo84] S. Bloch, *Height pairings for algebraic cycles*, Proceedings of the Luminy conference on algebraic K-theory (Luminy, 1983), 1984, pp. 119–145, DOI 10.1016/0022-4049(84)90032-X. MR772054 (86h:14015)

[BC83] A. Borel and W. Casselman, *L^2-cohomology of locally symmetric manifolds of finite volume*, Duke Math. J. **50** (1983), no. 3, 625–647. MR714821

[BHK+20] J. H. Bruinier, B. Howard, S. S. Kudla, M. Rapoport, and T. Yang, *Modularity of generating series of divisors on unitary Shimura varieties*, Astérisque **421** (2020), 7–125, DOI 10.24033/ast. MR4183376

[BH06] C. J. Bushnell and G. Henniart, *The local Langlands conjecture for* GL(2), Grundlehren der Mathematischen Wissenschaften [Fundamental Principles of Mathematical Sciences], vol. 335, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 2006. MR2234120

[Buz97] K. Buzzard, *Integral models of certain Shimura curves*, Duke Math. J. **87** (1997), no. 3, 591–612. MR1446619

[Car12] A. Caraiani, *Local-global compatibility and the action of monodromy on nearby cycles*, Duke Math. J. **161** (2012), no. 12, 2311–2413. MR2972460

[Car86] H. Carayol, *Sur la mauvaise réduction des courbes de Shimura*, Compositio Math. **59** (1986), no. 2, 151–230 (French). MR860139

[Cho] S. Cho, *The basic locus of unitary Shimura varieties with unramified parahoric level, and special cycles*. arXiv:1807.09997.

[Del79] P. Deligne, *Variétés de Shimura: interprétation modulaire, et techniques de construction de modèles canoniques*, Automorphic forms, representations and L-functions (Proc. Sympos. Pure Math., Oregon State Univ., Corvallis, Ore., 1977), Proc. Sympos. Pure Math., XXXIII, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, R.I., 1979, pp. 247–289 (French). MR546620

[DM69] P. Deligne and D. Mumford, *The irreducibility of the space of curves of given genus*, Inst. Hautes Études Sci. Publ. Math. **36** (1969), 75–109. MR0262240

[DR73] P. Deligne and M. Rapoport, *Les schémas de modules de courbes elliptiques*, Modular functions of one variable, II (Proc. Internat. Summer School, Univ. Antwerp, Antwerp, 1972), Springer, Berlin, 1973, pp. 143–316. Lecture Notes in Math., Vol. 349 (French). MR0337993

[Den89] C. Deninger, *Higher regulators and Hecke L-series of imaginary quadratic fields. I*, Invent. Math. **96** (1989), no. 1, 1–69. MR981737

[Fal83] G. Faltings, *Endlichkeitssätze für abelsche Varietäten über Zahlkörpern*, Invent. Math. **73** (1983), no. 3, 349–366 (German). MR718935

[Ful98] W. Fulton, *Intersection theory*, 2nd ed., Ergebnisse der Mathematik und ihrer Grenzgebiete. 3. Folge. A Series of Modern Surveys in Mathematics [Results in Mathematics and Related Areas. 3rd Series. A Series of Modern Surveys in Mathematics], vol. 2, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1998. MR1644323

[GGP12a] W. T. Gan, B. H. Gross, and D. Prasad, *Symplectic local root numbers, central critical L values, and restriction problems in the representation theory of classical groups*, Astérisque **346** (2012), 1–109. MR3202556

[GGP12b] ———, *Restrictions of representations of classical groups: examples*, Astérisque **346** (2012), 111–170. MR3202557

[GI16] W. T. Gan and A. Ichino, *The Gross-Prasad conjecture and local theta correspondence*, Invent. Math. **206** (2016), no. 3, 705–799, DOI 10.1007/s00222-016-0662-8. MR3573972

[GT16] W. T. Gan and S. Takeda, *A proof of the Howe duality conjecture*, J. Amer. Math. Soc. **29** (2016), no. 2, 473–493. MR3454380

[GR90] S. S. Gelbart and J. D. Rogawski, *Exceptional representations and Shimura's integral for the local unitary group* U(3), Festschrift in honor of I. I. Piatetski-Shapiro on the occasion of his sixtieth birthday, Part I (Ramat Aviv, 1989), Israel Math. Conf. Proc., vol. 2, Weizmann, Jerusalem, 1990, pp. 19–75. MR1159099

[GR91] ———, *L-functions and Fourier-Jacobi coefficients for the unitary group* U(3), Invent. Math. **105** (1991), no. 3, 445–472. MR1117148

[GJS09] D. Ginzburg, D. Jiang, and D. Soudry, *Poles of L-functions and theta liftings for orthogonal groups*, J. Inst. Math. Jussieu **8** (2009), no. 4, 693–741. MR2540878

[GG11] Z. Gong and L. Grenié, *An inequality for local unitary theta correspondence*, Ann. Fac. Sci. Toulouse Math. (6) **20** (2011), no. 1, 167–202 (English, with English and French summaries). MR2830396

[Gro21] B. H. Gross, *Incoherent definite spaces and Shimura varieties*, Relative trace formulas, Simons Symp., Springer, Cham, 2021, pp. 187–215.

[GK93] B. H. Gross and K. Keating, *On the intersection of modular correspondences*, Invent. Math. **112** (1993), no. 2, 225–245, DOI 10.1007/BF01232433. MR1213101

[GK92] B. H. Gross and S. S. Kudla, *Heights and the central critical values of triple product L-functions*, Compositio Math. **81** (1992), no. 2, 143–209. MR1145805

[GZ86] B. H. Gross and D. B. Zagier, *Heegner points and derivatives of L-series*, Invent. Math. **84** (1986), no. 2, 225–320, DOI 10.1007/BF01388809. MR833192

[Har93] M. Harris, *L-functions of 2×2 unitary groups and factorization of periods of Hilbert modular forms*, J. Amer. Math. Soc. **6** (1993), no. 3, 637–719. MR1186960

[HKS96] M. Harris, S. S. Kudla, and W. J. Sweet, *Theta dichotomy for unitary groups*, J. Amer. Math. Soc. **9** (1996), no. 4, 941–1004. MR1327161

[HLZ19] X. He, C. Li, and Y. Zhu, *Fine Deligne-Lusztig varieties and arithmetic fundamental lemmas*, Forum Math. Sigma **7** (2019), e47, 55, DOI 10.1017/fms.2019.45. MR4061970

[How15] B. Howard, *Complex multiplication cycles and Kudla-Rapoport divisors, II*, Amer. J. Math. **137** (2015), no. 3, 639–698, DOI 10.1353/ajm.2015.0021. MR3357118

[Ich04] A. Ichino, *A regularized Siegel-Weil formula for unitary groups*, Math. Z. **247** (2004), no. 2, 241–277. MR2064052

[JR11] H. Jacquet and S. Rallis, *On the Gross-Prasad conjecture for unitary groups*, On certain L-functions, Clay Math. Proc., vol. 13, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI, 2011, pp. 205–264. MR2767518

[JZ20] D. Jiang and L. Zhang, *On the non-vanishing of the central value of certain L-functions: unitary groups*, J. Eur. Math. Soc. (JEMS) **22** (2020), no. 6, 1759–1783, DOI 10.4171/jems/955. MR4092898

[KMSW] T. Kaletha, A. Minguez, S. W. Shin, and P.-J. White, *Endoscopic Classification of Representations: Inner Forms of Unitary Groups.* arXiv:1409.3731.

[KM85] N. M. Katz and B. Mazur, *Arithmetic moduli of elliptic curves*, Annals of Mathematics Studies, vol. 108, Princeton University Press, Princeton, NJ, 1985. MR772569

[Kim99] H. H. Kim, *Langlands-Shahidi method and poles of automorphic L-functions: application to exterior square L-functions*, Canad. J. Math. **51** (1999), no. 4, 835–849. MR1701344

[Kis10] M. Kisin, *Integral models for Shimura varieties of abelian type*, J. Amer. Math. Soc. **23** (2010), no. 4, 967–1012. MR2669706

[KK07] T. Konno and K. Konno, *On doubling construction for real unitary dual pairs*, Kyushu J. Math. **61** (2007), no. 1, 35–82. MR2317282

[Kot92] R. E. Kottwitz, *Points on some Shimura varieties over finite fields*, J. Amer. Math. Soc. **5** (1992), no. 2, 373–444. MR1124982

[Kud97] S. S. Kudla, *Algebraic cycles on Shimura varieties of orthogonal type*, Duke Math. J. **86** (1997), no. 1, 39–78, DOI 10.1215/S0012-7094-97-08602-6. MR1427845

[KR94] S. S. Kudla and S. Rallis, *A regularized Siegel-Weil formula: the first term identity*, Ann. of Math. (2) **140** (1994), no. 1, 1–80. MR1289491

[KR11] S. Kudla and M. Rapoport, *Special cycles on unitary Shimura varieties I. Unramified local theory*, Invent. Math. **184** (2011), no. 3, 629–682, DOI 10.1007/s00222-010-0298-z. MR2800697

[KR14] ———, *Special cycles on unitary Shimura varieties II: Global theory*, J. Reine Angew. Math. **697** (2014), 91–157, DOI 10.1515/crelle-2012-0121. MR3281653

[KS97] S. S. Kudla and W. J. Sweet Jr., *Degenerate principal series representations for* $\mathrm{U}(n,n)$, Israel J. Math. **98** (1997), 253–306. MR1459856

[Kün01] K. Künnemann, *Height pairings for algebraic cycles on abelian varieties*, Ann. Sci. École Norm. Sup. (4) **34** (2001), no. 4, 503–523 (English, with English and French summaries). MR1852008

[Lan71] R. P. Langlands, *Euler products*, Yale University Press, New Haven, Conn.-London, 1971. A James K. Whittemore Lecture in Mathematics given at Yale University, 1967; Yale Mathematical Monographs, 1. MR0419366

[Lee94] S. T. Lee, *On some degenerate principal series representations of* $\mathrm{U}(n,n)$, J. Funct. Anal. **126** (1994), no. 2, 305–366. MR1305072

[LZ17] C. Li and Y. Zhu, *Remarks on the arithmetic fundamental lemma*, Algebra Number Theory **11** (2017), no. 10, 2425–2445, DOI 10.2140/ant.2017.11.2425. MR3744362

[LL99] Q. Liu and D. Lorenzini, *Models of curves and finite covers*, Compositio Math. **118** (1999), no. 1, 61–102. MR1705977

[Liu11a] Y. Liu, *Arithmetic theta lifting and L-derivatives for unitary groups, I*, Algebra Number Theory **5** (2011), no. 7, 849–921. MR2928563

[Liu11b] ———, *Arithmetic theta lifting and L-derivatives for unitary groups, II*, Algebra Number Theory **5** (2011), no. 7, 923–1000. MR2928564

[Liu14] ———, *Relative trace formulae toward Bessel and Fourier-Jacobi periods on unitary groups*, Manuscripta Math. **145** (2014), no. 1-2, 1–69. MR3244725

[Liu16] ———, *Hirzebruch-Zagier cycles and twisted triple product Selmer groups*, Invent. Math. **205** (2016), no. 3, 693–780. MR3539925

[LTXZZ] Y. Liu, Y. Tian, L. Xiao, W. Zhang, and X. Zhu, *On the Beilinson–Bloch–Kato conjecture for Rankin–Selberg motives*. arXiv:1912.11942.

[Loo88] E. Looijenga, *L^2-cohomology of locally symmetric varieties*, Compositio Math. **67** (1988), no. 1, 3–20. MR949269

[Mih20] A. Mihatsch, *Relative unitary RZ-spaces and the Arithmetic Fundamental Lemma*, Journal of the Institute of Mathematics of Jussieu, posted on 2020, 1–61, DOI 10.1017/S1474748020000079. arXiv:1611.06520.

[Mil92] J. S. Milne, *The points on a Shimura variety modulo a prime of good reduction*, The zeta functions of Picard modular surfaces, Univ. Montréal, Montreal, QC, 1992, pp. 151–253. MR1155229

[Mœg97] C. Mœglin, *Non nullité de certains relêvements par séries théta*, J. Lie Theory **7** (1997), no. 2, 201–229 (French, with English summary). MR1473165

[MW95] C. Mœglin and J.-L. Waldspurger, *Spectral decomposition and Eisenstein series*, Cambridge Tracts in Mathematics, vol. 113, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1995. Une paraphrase de l'Écriture [A paraphrase of Scripture]. MR1361168

[Mok15] C. P. Mok, *Endoscopic classification of representations of quasi-split unitary groups*, Mem. Amer. Math. Soc. **235** (2015), no. 1108, vi+248, DOI 10.1090/memo/1108. MR3338302

[MS19] S. Morel and J. Suh, *The standard sign conjecture on algebraic cycles: the case of Shimura varieties*, J. Reine Angew. Math. **748** (2019), 139–151, DOI 10.1515/crelle-2016-0048. MR3918431

[Mur90] J. P. Murre, *On the motive of an algebraic surface*, J. Reine Angew. Math. **409** (1990), 190–204. MR1061525

[MR92] V. K. Murty and D. Ramakrishnan, *The Albanese of unitary Shimura varieties*, The zeta functions of Picard modular surfaces, Univ. Montréal, Montreal, QC, 1992, pp. 445–464. MR1155237

[O'S11] P. O'Sullivan, *Algebraic cycles on an abelian variety*, J. Reine Angew. Math. **654** (2011), 1–81, DOI 10.1515/CRELLE.2011.025. MR2795752

[Pin90] R. Pink, *Arithmetical compactification of mixed Shimura varieties*, Bonner Mathematische Schriften [Bonn Mathematical Publications], vol. 209, Universität Bonn, Mathematisches Institut, Bonn, 1990. Dissertation, Rheinische Friedrich-Wilhelms-Universität Bonn, Bonn, 1989. MR1128753

[Raj00] C. S. Rajan, *Refinement of strong multiplicity one for automorphic representations of* $\mathrm{GL}(n)$, Proc. Amer. Math. Soc. **128** (2000), no. 3, 691–700. MR1707005

[RSZ17] M. Rapoport, B. Smithling, and W. Zhang, *On the arithmetic transfer conjecture for exotic smooth formal moduli spaces*, Duke Math. J. **166** (2017), no. 12, 2183–2336, DOI 10.1215/00127094-2017-0003. MR3694568

[RSZ18] ———, *Regular formal moduli spaces and arithmetic transfer conjectures*, Math. Ann. **370** (2018), no. 3-4, 1079–1175, DOI 10.1007/s00208-017-1526-2. MR3770164

[RSZ20] ———, *Arithmetic diagonal cycles on unitary Shimura varieties*, Compos. Math. **156** (2020), no. 9, 1745–1824, DOI 10.1112/s0010437x20007289. MR4167594

[RTZ13] M. Rapoport, U. Terstiege, and W. Zhang, *On the arithmetic fundamental lemma in the minuscule case*, Compos. Math. **149** (2013), no. 10, 1631–1666. MR3123304

[RZ96] M. Rapoport and Th. Zink, *Period spaces for p-divisible groups*, Annals of Mathematics Studies, vol. 141, Princeton University Press, Princeton, NJ, 1996. MR1393439

[Rog90] J. D. Rogawski, *Automorphic representations of unitary groups in three variables*, Annals of Mathematics Studies, vol. 123, Princeton University Press, Princeton, NJ, 1990. MR1081540

[Rog92] ———, *Analytic expression for the number of points mod p*, The zeta functions of Picard modular surfaces, Univ. Montréal, Montreal, QC, 1992, pp. 65–109. MR1155227

[SS90] L. Saper and M. Stern, *L_2-cohomology of arithmetic varieties*, Ann. of Math. (2) **132** (1990), no. 1, 1–69. MR1059935

[Ser59] J.-P. Serre, *Morphismes universels et variété d'Albanese*, Séminaire Claude Chevalley, Vol. 4 (1958–1959), 1959, pp. Talk No. 10, 1–22 (French).

[Sha88] F. Shahidi, *On the Ramanujan conjecture and finiteness of poles for certain L-functions*, Ann. of Math. (2) **127** (1988), no. 3, 547–584. MR942520

[Shi71] G. Shimura, *On the zeta-function of an abelian variety with complex multiplication*, Ann. of Math. (2) **94** (1971), 504–533. MR0288089

[SP] The Stacks Project Authors, *Stacks Project*. Available at http://math.columbia.edu/algebraic_geometry/stacks-git/.

[SW78] S. Sternberg and J. A. Wolf, *Hermitian Lie algebras and metaplectic representations. I*, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. **238** (1978), 1–43. MR0486325

[Sun12] B. Sun, *Multiplicity one theorems for Fourier-Jacobi models*, Amer. J. Math. **134** (2012), no. 6, 1655–1678, DOI 10.1353/ajm.2012.0044. MR2999291

[SZ15] B. Sun and C.-B. Zhu, *Conservation relations for local theta correspondence*, J. Amer. Math. Soc. **28** (2015), no. 4, 939–983. MR3369906

[Tan99] V. Tan, *Poles of Siegel Eisenstein series on* $\mathrm{U}(n,n)$, Canad. J. Math. **51** (1999), no. 1, 164–175. MR1692899

[Wed99] T. Wedhorn, *Ordinariness in good reductions of Shimura varieties of PEL-type*, Ann. Sci. École Norm. Sup. (4) **32** (1999), no. 5, 575–618, DOI 10.1016/S0012-9593(01)80001-X (English, with English and French summaries). MR1710754

[Wit08] O. Wittenberg, *On Albanese torsors and the elementary obstruction*, Math. Ann. **340** (2008), no. 4, 805–838. MR2372739

[Wu13] C. Wu, *Irreducibility of theta lifting for unitary groups*, J. Number Theory **133** (2013), no. 10, 3296–3318. MR3071813

[Xue14] H. Xue, *The Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture for* $\mathrm{U}(n)\times\mathrm{U}(n)$, Adv. Math. **262** (2014), 1130–1191. MR3228451

[Xue16] ______, *Fourier-Jacobi periods and the central value of Rankin-Selberg L-functions*, Israel J. Math. **212** (2016), no. 2, 547–633. MR3505397

[YZZ13] X. Yuan, S.-W. Zhang, and W. Zhang, *The Gross-Zagier formula on Shimura curves*, Annals of Mathematics Studies, vol. 184, Princeton University Press, Princeton, NJ, 2013. MR3237437

[YZZ] ______, *Triple product L-series and Gross–Kudla–Schoen cycles*. https://www.math.columbia.edu/~wzhang/math/online/triple.pdf, preprint.

[Yun11] Z. Yun, *The fundamental lemma of Jacquet and Rallis*, Duke Math. J. **156** (2011), no. 2, 167–227. With an appendix by Julia Gordon. MR2769216

[Zha19] S. Zhang, *Linear forms, algebraic cycles, and derivatives of L-series*, Sci. China Math. **62** (2019), no. 11, 2401–2408, DOI 10.1007/s11425-019-1589-7. MR4028281

[Zha12] W. Zhang, *On arithmetic fundamental lemmas*, Invent. Math. **188** (2012), no. 1, 197–252. MR2897697

[Zha14a] ———, *Fourier transform and the global Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture for unitary groups*, Ann. of Math. (2) **180** (2014), no. 3, 971–1049. MR3245011

[Zha14b] ———, *Automorphic period and the central value of Rankin-Selberg L-function*, J. Amer. Math. Soc. **27** (2014), no. 2, 541–612. MR3164988

[Zha21] ———, *Weil representation and Arithmetic Fundamental Lemma*, Ann. of Math. (2) **193** (2021), no. 3, 863–978, DOI 10.4007/annals.2021.193.3.5. MR4250392

Yifeng Liu
Institute for Advanced Study in Mathematics
Zhejiang University
Hangzhou 310058
China
E-mail address: liuyf0719@zju.edu.cn

Appendix:

Yihang Zhu
Department of Mathematics
University of Maryland
College Park, MD 20742
E-mail address: yhzhu@umd.edu
Chao Li
Department of Mathematics
Columbia University
New York, NY 10027
E-mail address: chaoli@math.columbia.edu

Received January 23, 2019